

MADE
WHOLE

**MADE WHOLE THROUGH OUR
MARRIAGE TO GOD**

Continuing An Examination of the
First Edition of
SCIENCE and HEALTH

Helen M. Wright

BY THE SAME AUTHOR

Mary Baker Eddy: A New Look

Mary Baker Eddy's Church Manual & Church

Universal & Triumphant

Mary Baker Eddy: God's Great Scientist, Vol. I

Mary Baker Eddy: God's Great Scientist, Vol. II

Mary Baker Eddy: God's Great Scientist, Vol. III

If Mary Baker Eddy's Manual Were Obeyed

America: Cradle for the Second Coming of the Christ

Mary Baker Eddy Reveals Your Divinity

Humanity's Divinity

Mary Baker Eddy, Leader Forever (44 page pamphlet) FREE

Mary Baker Eddy, Leader Forever (112 page booklet) FREE

Copyright 1996 by Helen M. Wright

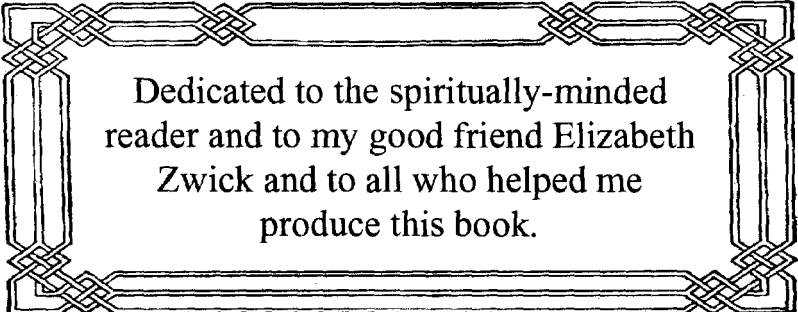
All rights reserved

Manufactured in the United States of America

ISBN 1-886505-04-7



Mary Baker Eddy



Dedicated to the spiritually-minded
reader and to my good friend Elizabeth
Zwick and to all who helped me
produce this book.



Sunrise at Bow
from painting by James F. Gilman

Scripture (I John 3:2) and Christian Science call us to become what we **ALREADY ARE**. Do we know who and what we are? The purpose of this book is to help all of us to realize the God-being we **ARE** and have forever been.

Jesus “made himself the Son of God” (John 19:7). This book challenges us to do the same—to awaken to our present perfection, find that we are whole, and begin to use our untapped resources of power.

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

I am deeply grateful to Elizabeth Zwick for her editing. I also wish to express deepest appreciation to all the kind friends who read the manuscript and made helpful suggestions, to David Keyston for making the index and for his skillful computer work in getting this book ready for the press, and to dear Marie, who kept everything else running smoothly while I was buried in writing.

I wish to thank all who have ordered and read my books and the many who have written wonderful letters of support. A special 'thank you' also to those who have already ordered this book.

EXPLANATORY NOTES

Here and there throughout this book the reader will find undocumented quotations, remembered from talks with the Carpenters, Jr. and Sr., and other early workers in God's vineyard.

Also, in cases where the author is drawing on early copies of materials given her by the Carpenters, the reader may note slight differences in wording, compared to published Carpenter materials.

References to the last edition of *Science and Health with Key to the Scriptures* by Mary Baker Eddy are shown in parenthesis: e.g. (S&H 522:10).

References from the first edition of *Science and Health* are distinctly marked as first edition references.

Mrs. Eddy did not capitalize *Science* in her first edition. However in the quotes selected for the author's four volumes on the first edition, *Science*, when referring to Mrs. Eddy's revelation and discovery, is capitalized to avoid confusion with the various natural sciences.

Also, commas, where obviously superfluous—in conformity with the custom prevailing a century ago—have sometimes been omitted in the portions here extracted. In an article to the *Boston Journal*, January 20, 1876, regarding the first edition, Mrs. Eddy wrote: "'Science and Health' bears the burden of many typographical errors." The author of this present book feels no purpose would be served in perpetuating obvious errors.

"*Science and Health*," like the Bible, is not italicized in the author's books on Mary Baker Eddy.

Readers familiar with Christian Science will discern that the truths herein presented all have their origin in the "hopelessly original" writings of Mary Baker Eddy.

ABBREVIATIONS

Abbreviations for titles of Mrs. Eddy's writings are those used in the *Concordance to Miscellaneous Writings and Works Other than Science and Health*.

<i>Mis</i>	<i>Miscellaneous Writings</i>
<i>Ret</i>	<i>Retrospection and Introspection</i>
<i>Un</i>	<i>Unity of Good</i>
<i>Pul</i>	<i>Pulpit and Press</i>
<i>No</i>	<i>No and Yes</i>
<i>Pan</i>	<i>Christian Science Versus Pantheism</i>
'00	<i>Message to The Mother Church, 1900</i>
'01	<i>Message to the Mother Church, 1901</i>
'02	<i>Message to the Mother Church, 1902</i>
<i>Hea</i>	<i>Christian Healing</i>
<i>Peo</i>	<i>The People's Idea of God</i>
<i>My</i>	<i>The First Church of Christ, Scientist, and Miscellany</i>
<i>Po</i>	<i>Poems</i>
<i>Man</i>	<i>Church Manual</i>

Prose Works is often referred to as Mary Baker Eddy's *Other Writings*.

Six Days is the abbreviation for *Mary Baker Eddy's Six Days of Revelation*, by Richard Oakes.

EOF is the abbreviation for *Essays and Other Footprints*, compiled by Richard Oakes, also referred to as the "Red Book."

DCC is the abbreviation for *Divinity Course and General Collectanea*, compiled by Richard Oakes, also referred to as the "Blue Book."

CONTENTS

PART I THE UNION THAT HEALS

CHAPTER I	
THE JOURNEY BEFORE US	1
CHAPTER II	
THE LONG ROAD TO REALIZATION	11
CHAPTER III	
“BEHOLD, THOU ART MADE WHOLE”	33
CHAPTER IV	
“DIVINE LOVE IS MY SHEPHERD”	67
CHAPTER V	
THE SPIRITUAL WEDDING	92

PART II

MARY BAKER EDDY ON MARRIAGE

CHAPTER VI	
MRS. EDDY’S TEACHING ON SEX AND PROGENY	119
CHAPTER VII	
THE FIRST EDITION ON MARRIAGE	137
CHAPTER VIII	
PRIVATE TEACHINGS ON MARRIAGE	164
CHAPTER IX	
DISCERNING AND GRASPING GOD’S CREATION	194

CONTENTS

PART III LIVING THE DIVINE MARRIAGE

CHAPTER X	
THE HUMAN AND DIVINE COINCIDENCE	223
CHAPTER XI	
THE WOMAN OF PROPHECY	244
CHAPTER XII	
“GO YE INTO ALL THE WORLD”	260
CHAPTER XIII	
THE TEXTBOOK BRINGS THE SYSTEM OF CHRISTIAN SCIENCE	283
CHAPTER XIV	
“THE MANUAL WILL SAVE THE CAUSE”	299
AFTERWARD	
ADDENDUM	323
INDEX	325

PREFACE

Mary Baker Eddy's work on earth was and *is* an astounding achievement. In human history her work for mankind is without parallel. So high, so holy, so far above human comprehension was her discovery of our true identity that only by small degrees does the human mind catch glimpses of its wondrous glory, like star-light that is long in reaching this world.

This book, like all my other books, goes forth to *KEEP THE TRUTH OF MRS. EDDY'S CHARACTER BEFORE THE WORLD*, because she has said that "doing this would help the students and *DO MORE THAN ALL ELSE FOR THE CAUSE.*"† As Christian Scientists learn to love our Leader, Mary Baker Eddy, who showed us how to overcome evil, the Christian Science movement will again prosper.

When Dr. Francis Fluno was asked what most deeply impressed him in his day-to-day association with Mrs. Eddy, he replied, "Outstanding beyond all else was the imperious sense of Mrs. Eddy's 'closeness to God,' of her visible, actual awareness of the very presence of Spirit. A source of inspiration beyond words," he said, "it was to see this, and to see her constant air of 'listening' to Truth, listening always to perceive the purpose and direction of the divine Mind in all things" (A Carpenter Item).

Christian Scientists were happy to see Mary Baker Eddy inducted into the National Women's Hall of Fame in October, 1995. But we recall that her divine revelation—like that of Jesus—was first

†Mrs. Eddy was explicit as to why the recognition of her place in prophecy is directly linked to the healing work and prosperity of the Christian Science movement.

met with “the fixedness of mortal illusions, and the human hatred of Truth.” The earthly price of spirituality in a material age and the great moral distance between Christianity and sensualism precluded Christian Science from finding favor with the worldly-minded.

If a woman’s greatness can be measured by the opposition it takes to discourage her, then Mary Baker Eddy is the greatest woman ever to tread this earth. Columbus faced starvation and disgrace after discovering America, “but sterner still would have been his fate,” said Mary Baker Eddy in *Science and Health*, “if his discovery had undermined the favorite inclinations of a sensuous philosophy” and had he proclaimed that the “scientific real is the sensuous unreal.”

People of Mrs. Eddy’s time were not ready for the great truth about themselves—were not ready for Mary Baker Eddy, the woman “clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet” (Rev. 12); they were not ready for the “*second appearing in the flesh* of the Christ, Truth” (S&H 118:7). They were not ready for Mrs. Eddy’s great revelation that “the Christ, historically demonstrated by one man, was to be recognized as the Christ potentially demonstrated by *ALL MEN*.” Even today ecclesiasticism has done and is doing everything possible to bury her. As Einstein once said, “Great spirits have always met with violent opposition from mediocre minds.”

Mrs. Eddy quickly learned that she could only give people *OPENLY* what her age had “strength to bear” (*Un.* 6:12); and that “the head instructed before the heart is ready can cause great difficulties and sore defeats.” She found this painfully true when she taught Richard Kennedy the power of the mind, only to see him use that power for evil. It is only when we *seek first the kingdom of God* and learn *spiritually* what is in our textbook that evil cannot be perpetrated with the power of the mind.

The bald statement without self-evident explanation is blinding to eyes still struggling to open. Before people can accept the full force of revelation, “the human self must be evangelized.” Realizing this, Mrs. Eddy wisely decided to hide the full truth of Mind’s power. As she revised *Science and Health* she veiled her divinely inspired revelation so we would find it only as our character becomes

more like the God-character. In order to have the revelation, we each, like Jesus, must make ourself “the Son of God” and discover Christian Science for ourself in Mary Baker Eddy’s writings—discover and awaken to our present divinity and perfection and to our unlimited potential, *HERE AND NOW*.

Mrs. Eddy had a second reason for hiding her most profound teachings, namely, to prevent the severe chemicalization occurring in church and society. If she had continued openly, she would have more strongly unified both Catholicism and Protestantism, as well as all other religions and the medical community, against Christian Science, since they all believed that your life started with the fertilization of an egg rather than that you have always existed from “before Abraham was.” In Mrs. Eddy’s day no one realized what Jesus meant when he prayed: “And now, O, Father, glorify thou me with thine own self with the glory I had with thee before the world was [before this dream of life in matter overtook me]” (John 17:5). Jesus knew that mortal existence is a dream from the womb to the tomb.

Mrs. Eddy’s new and bold teaching direct from infinite good would make the way rougher for genuine Christian Scientists, so she hid it. She saw that, while people of her time could not accept her full message, yet by her example and gentle guidance she could show them that “the good you do and embody gives you the only power obtainable” (S&H 192:23). So effective was this approach that for 70 years—from 1880 to the late 1940s—her students performed the same marvelous healings that Jesus’ disciples had wrought nearly 1900 years earlier. And within half a century after her great discovery, the most eminent physical scientists were beginning to see that she was right in her “scientific statement of being” found on page 468 of *Science and Health*.

Mrs. Eddy Was Wise and Practical

On page 217 of *Miscellany* the question is asked:

“If all matter is unreal, why do we deny the existence of

disease in the material body and not the body itself?"

"We deny first the existence of disease, because we can meet this negation more readily than we can negative all that the material senses affirm. It is written in "Science and Health with Key to the Scriptures": "An improved belief is one step out of error, and aids in taking the next step and in understanding the situation in Christian Science" (p. 296).

"Thus it is that our great Exemplar, Jesus of Nazareth, first takes up the subject. He does not require the last step to be taken first. He came to the world not to destroy the law of being, but to fulfil it in righteousness. He restored the diseased body to its normal action, functions, and organization, and in explanation of his deeds he said, "Suffer it to be so now: for thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteousness." Job said, "In my flesh shall I see God." Neither the Old nor the New Testament furnishes reasons or examples for the destruction of the human body, but for its restoration to life and health as the scientific proof of "God with us." The power and prerogative of Truth are to destroy all disease and to raise the dead--even the self-same Lazarus. The spiritual body, the incorporeal idea, came with the ascension.

"Jesus demonstrated the divine Principle of Christian Science when he presented his *material* body absolved from death and the grave."

She does not say he presented some ethereal, other-worldly body, but "his material body," the body which we have right here, right now, and which is our only body and is solid Spirit, true Substance.

An item of interest in Calvin Frye's diary tells of Mrs. Eddy saying: "My favorite philosopher, Josh Billings, says, 'It won't do to have the harmlessness of a dove till you get the wisdom of a serpent.' In my experience [Mrs. Eddy said] the innocence that thinketh no evil, not having the wisdom that Solomon demands of the wise man to 'foresee the evil and hide himself,' is but the prey & victim of evil. This innocence is self-deceived, and despites itself [though innocent] deceiveth others. It is the blind leading the blind which terminates in

both landing in the ditch....After writing this, I opened my Bible and looked upon this verse: ‘And the Lord commended the unjust steward, because he had done wisely; for the children of this world are in their generation wiser than the children of light’” (Luke 16:8).

Mrs. Eddy’s Solomon-like wisdom in foreseeing evil and hiding her great revelation from it, is evident in her changes to Science and Health. In her many revisions of that book, even as she refined Christian Science, noting finally, “Divine metaphysics is now reduced to a *SYSTEM*” (S&H 146:31), she also progressively buried the most profound and deeply spiritual of her teachings so that only students who were divinely ready would find them. Nearing the end of her sojourn with us she said to Laura Sargent, “There, Laura, I have hidden it, and hidden it, and hidden it. If I hide it any more they will never find it” (Lida Fitzpatrick, Vol. II, Association Addresses).

What a loss that would have been! Mary Baker Eddy wrote as she was God-inspired to do, “leaving the ages to grow up to it.” Today, we near the seventh thousand-year period of biblical history. “Material history is drawing to a close.” As the spiritual status urges its highest demands on mortals, the world hungers for a change of consciousness. As these “immortal cravings” (S&H 108:8) activate thought to lead us onward and upward to oneness with the infinite good we call God, it is this author’s hope that we will find we now have grown up to accept our present spiritual perfection so forcefully brought out in our Leader’s first edition of Science and Health.

We have much to learn by going back to study that book. Readers familiar with the “*Mary Baker Eddy, God’s Great Scientist*” series will recall how each volume focuses on a separate chapter of the first edition of Science and Health. In the book you have before you, the author uses the first edition’s Chapter VI, “Marriage,” as the springboard for examining Mrs. Eddy’s teaching concerning “marriage,” or how we make ourselves “the Son of God,” as Jesus did. We will look at statements from this Chapter VI, and then expand our view to look at pertinent statements from other chapters in the first edition, especially Chapters I to V. We will also draw from later editions of Science and Health and from other writings and teach-

ings of Mary Baker Eddy, especially those collected in what are called the “Red” and “Blue” books. These contain the material preserved by the Carpenters, and published by Richard Oakes, including many unpublished items, quotes, and other gems given us by our Leader.

There is nothing original in this book. The author—as in previous books—ascribes to Mary Baker Eddy’s writings all the truths herein stated—truths that wed you to the infinite good we call God. Because what Mrs. Eddy has written on the subjects of marriage, sex, and progeny is still so far in advance of general thought, the author of this book will largely confine what is said on these subjects to what Mary Baker Eddy herself has said or written. Armed with her spiritual revelations which were dictated by infinite good, we will rise heavenward faster than a homesick angel.

This book goes to you with the hope that it will answer questions that may have been puzzling you. It attempts to pull back the veil to show you your present divinity, and to help all attain the God-character, the Mind that is Love, so that this Mind can then reveal to you all that Mary Baker Eddy was forced to hide a century ago.

During my many years of study of our Leader’s writings, a new and deeper understanding of Christian Science has unfolded for me. It is this enlightenment which I wish to pass on, with the hope that these explanations will gain for the spiritually hungry a better understanding of their own real Mind’s power as they find themselves whole through wedding themselves to the infinite good we call God.

PART I

THE UNION THAT HEALS



Box G Brookline, Mass

Dec 25,
1909.

Beloved, A word
to the wise is suf-
ficient. Mother
wishes you all
a Happy Christmas,
a feast of Soul,
and a famine
of sense.
Lovingly Thine
Mary Baker Eddy.

Mrs. Eddy's letter to her household on Christmas Day, 1909.

"Beloved, A word, to the wise is sufficient.

Mother wishes you all a *Happy Christmas*,

a feast of Soul, and a famine of sense.

Lovingly thine, Mary Baker Eddy

CHAPTER I

THE JOURNEY BEFORE US

The Path to Wholeness

We are starting out on a great and glorious God-inspired, God-led adventure into the land of our marriage to the infinite good we call God—into the land of Christian Science, the ultimate revelation concerning what we already *ARE* in reality, but are unaware of. “...with sandals on and staff in hand, waiting for the watchword and the revelation of what, how, whither,” let us be faithful and obedient, and “God will do the rest” (*Mis.* 158:209).

Repeatedly throughout her writings Mrs. Eddy uses words that make references to the concept of marriage. She writes of the “wife of the Lamb,” of “a bridal betokened from above”; she defines “bride and bridegroom” metaphysically in terms of purity and understanding”; and speaks of “Love wedded to its own spiritual idea.” If we follow up these references we soon discover that, outside the Science and Health chapter on “Marriage,” and articles specifically about the human institution of marriage, she is always talking about the divine marriage—our wedding to Truth, our oneness with Mind. It is clear that this is the “real thing,”—the real marriage—while the human marriage contract is but a temporary expedient. As we mature into our true estate, as we grow in understanding to where we can fully claim our oneness with Principle and its manifestation, the artificially structured union is destined to fall away.

Our divine excursion in this book will take us into the spiritual land pioneered by Mary Baker Eddy as she fulfilled scriptural prophecy in bringing the Second Coming of the Christ. Mrs. Eddy’s message reveals humanity’s divinity, *your* divinity. Her book, Science

and Health, is a magic carpet on which we are wafted to a world we cannot enter in any way other than by studying thoroughly the letter and imbibing the Spirit.

Why must we study Science and Health?

Because through it we learn the truth that Jesus said would make us free. As we study thoroughly the letter and imbibe the spirit of Science and Health we lay hold of the little-comprehended truth of our present God-being. We learn that our real Mind, *OUR DIVINE MIND, IS ALL*.

There are no excess words in Science and Health; Truth is as tightly packed into every sentence as a Porsche engine under its hood. No wonder it is changing the entire world's thinking! The Bible promises, "I will overturn, overturn, overturn it" until we actually realize what we divinely already *ARE*. It is Mary Baker Eddy's writing in her "little book" that does the overturning and makes Love visible as we *PRACTICE* what we read.

In Science and Health Mrs. Eddy has many references to "practice." We learn by *DOING*. Our high goal is not reached by following the line of least resistance. It's gained by "journeying 'uphill all the way'" (S&H 574:4). We become like that on which our hearts are set. If we wish to become one with infinite good, we must *PRAC-TICE* and *APPLY* the rules at every opportunity. Only knowledge that is *USED* sticks in our mind and becomes habit.

Foremost, is saying "No!" to error. We need to turn from error and fix our minds on the goal of goodness—just as in working out a mathematical problem we turn away from everything except the principle of math. Only thus is the right solution "earned and won." "Obstacles," Hannah More said, "are those frightful things you see when you take your eyes off the goal." As we go forth let us keep the high goal of goodness always before us.

Spiritual Ideas Unfold as We Advance

Our divine odyssey will take us deep into Mary Baker Eddy's first edition of Science and Health, and into the private instruction

she gave only to her most trusted students—instruction for which the world, in general, was not ready a century ago. The music is nothing if the audience is deaf. In the hundred and thirty years since Mrs. Eddy’s discovery, it is our hope humanity has somewhat acquired the wisdom necessary to understand “this practical Christian Science [that] is the divine Mind, your real Mind, the incorporeal Truth and Love, shining through the mists of materiality and melting away the shadows called sin, disease, and death” (*Mis.* 205:3).

Advancing on our spiritual journey into the Science of being we will discover that the “I” which is God is the “I” which is man. There is only *one*, since your own real Mind is one with what it shadows forth. We will find we are indissolubly wedded to the infinite good we call God as we discover it to be our own real Mind. When we realize our oneness with Love and stay with it, the erroneous belief that man is separate from God fades out, and our divine Mind unfolds itself as itself, to itself.

Someone has said, “It is good to have an end to journey toward, but it is the journey that matters in the end.” The journey out of ignorance of God and into oneness with Love is all *WITHIN OUR OWN MIND*. The answer is already within ourselves, since we are “alone with our own being and with the reality of things” (*Mess.* ‘01. 20:8). The greatest need mankind has is awareness of Truth. If only each one knew the Truth he is in reality, it would set him free. On our ‘safari’ we will learn more of the Truth which divine revelation poured into Mrs. Eddy’s waiting consciousness in her scriptural fulfillment of the Second Coming of the Christ—the truth concerning you—concerning what you really *are*.

Who Are We Really?

“Is man’s spiritual sonship a personal gift to man, or is it the reality of his being, in divine Science? Man’s knowledge of this grand verity gives him power to demonstrate his divine Principle [the Principle that he is], which in turn is requisite in order to understand his sonship, or unity [marriage] with God, good....When we

understand man's true birthright, that he is 'born, not...of the will of the flesh, not of the will of man, but of God,' we shall understand that man is the offspring of Spirit, and *not of the flesh*; recognize him through spiritual, and not material laws; and regard him as spiritual, and not material. His sonship...is not, then, a personal gift, but is the order of divine Science....Mortals will lose their sense of mortality...in the proportion that they gain the sense of man's spiritual pre-existence as God's child; as the offspring of good, and not of God's opposite,—evil, or a fallen man" (*Mis.* 181:3).

For this age, Mrs. Eddy taught that Truth has taken form as a universal *SCIENCE* rather than as a personal Saviour. The Christ historically demonstrated by one man is to be recognized as the Christ potentially demonstrable by *ALL MEN*, as we learn that our own real Mind is God. The Christ was Jesus' spiritual selfhood. It is also *your* spiritual selfhood.

"Truth, defiant of error or matter, is Science, dispelling a false sense and leading man into the true sense of selfhood and Godhood...wherein true manhood and womanhood go forth in the radiance of eternal being and its perfections, unchanged and unchangeable" (*Un.* 42:24).

In Mrs. Eddy's holy teaching we find, plainly set forth, our marriage to the infinite good we call God. The road we travel may be long but at the end lies the Holy Grail of understanding—understanding of our present divinity, our present Godhood, namely, that *OUR OWN REAL MIND IS GOD*. On this road we don't make mistakes; we just have learnings; we lose our fear of being wrong. "The time for thinkers has come....Ignorance of God is no longer the stepping-stone to faith" (S&H vii:13). We venture forth knowing we "possess sovereign power to think" (*Pul.* 3:7) because *in reality we have the Mind of God*.

Why does Mrs. Eddy say, "The time for thinkers has come"? (S&H vii:13). Why does she have 126 references to "learn," "learned," and "learning"? Jesus said, "Ye shall know the truth." But how can you know it unless you first learn it? The science of mathematics is true, but before you went to school did you know that

2x2=4? No. You had to learn it.

We will find it is the same with learning our God-being. The nature of Mind is to know, and the time for thinkers has *come*. Without thinking we do not reach *knowing*. Yes, Mind knows all. That is true; and that Mind is *your* Mind. But all understanding is not consciously known to you. You consciously *KNOW* only as much of understanding as has consciously unfolded to you.

Jesus, Mrs. Eddy says, unfolded God to man. He unfolded the remedy for Adam or error. Through thinking—the activity of your real Mind—your Mind will forever unfold itself as intelligence.

“Spiritual ideas unfold as we advance”... “they unfold the unity and reality of good” (S&H 361:23, and 269:6). We see this unfolding in *Science and Health*. In the current edition Chapter I, “Prayer,” leads to Chapter II and the praying for the at-one-ment of humanity with divinity, which in turn leads to Chapter III, “Marriage,” where we find that what God has joined together is the true human with the divine. “The more I understand true humanhood, the more I see it to be sinless,—as ignorant of sin as is the perfect Maker” (*Un.* 49:8).

The Footsteps of the Pioneer

A paragraph in the May, 1906 *Christian Science Journal*—also republished in the Foreword to *Miscellany*, page vii:3—reads: “Strive it ever so hard, the First Church of Christ, Scientist, can never do for its Leader what its Leader has done for this church [alias “the structure of Truth and Love in our consciousness”]; but its members can so protect their own thoughts that they are not unwittingly made to deprive their Leader of her rightful place as the revelator to this age [and every age to come] of the immortal truths *testified to by Jesus and the prophets.*”

Mrs. Eddy’s sojourn here—a life of healing that spanned almost ninety years—opened a new territory to us. In the Preface to the current edition of *Science and Health*, she tells us, “Future ages must declare what the pioneer has accomplished” (p. vii:25). Mrs. Eddy was indeed a pioneer, mapping out the road of our marriage to

God, our oneness with divine Love. Light-years ahead of us though she was, in order to show us how to become aware of our oneness with infinite good she had to come down to where we were in our ignorance and lead the way, step by step. That Mary Baker Eddy did this for us should make any half-serious Christian Scientist jump to the ceiling for joy and gratitude.

Mrs. Eddy knew from personal experience what slavery means: “a material body bound in the chains of chronic illness, under the lash of pain.” Out of such bondage came her great discovery that error of any kind is unreal. The impact of the trials she endured sundered the ties of the flesh. She found herself alone in the wilderness of suffering. There, as her thought was united to God, and Love alone supported her struggling heart, she saw error’s total unreality and God’s Allness.

Mrs. Eddy discovered that “the sick need only awaken from the dream of life in matter—of pain and disease in matter, yea, of sensation in matter that you call personal sense, to realize themselves well.” She saw that sickness and every discord is a belief, illusion; it is not from Truth, God, or Spirit. Neither is it from matter. *MATTER CAN-NOT SUFFER*, can it? Sickness is the suffering of mind. Error, false belief, not Truth, produces all the suffering on earth. Suffering is caused by *belief*, though it seems very real, even as the images of dreams seem substance and real.

To acquire the spiritual understanding of your true God-identity requires much progress from sense to Soul. Much growth is required to break up the dream, the illusion—to crumple the barriers behind which we have withdrawn in defense and isolation. Mrs. Eddy saw that the salve for loneliness and fear is learning to love.

Teaching a Student to Heal

As “a child in the newly discovered world of Spirit,” Mrs. Eddy would spend the rest of her life exploring the way and leading others to see themselves as one with God, having the kingdom of God within their own consciousness. This is the true spiritual marriage, to which

Mrs. Eddy would refer again and again throughout her writings. Her message was simple: To enter into this union, we need only awaken from the Adam dream that evil and error are real.

Her proof was demonstrated by healing. How better to show the unreality of the shackled material body than through healing—right-mindedness? Mary Baker Eddy was a healer first, before she was ever a teacher, author, or founder. Knowing intuitively that *ALL IS MIND* in the so-called physical realm as well as in the spiritual realm, Mrs. Eddy healed naturally, as Jesus had healed.

The big question was: How could she teach others to heal as she did? At the beginning she was so eager to have a student learn the healing art that “When my second student went into practice,” she later wrote a friend, “I did the healing for him, sitting in a cold gloomy ante-room, while he was in the front office as the physician.

“This I did because my first student [Hiram Crafts] stopped his practice the first year, so great was the persecution. To get [a student] started, I had to do the work at first and not be seen doing it. I was pleased with the out-of-sight labor, liked it much better than to be in front....At one time in Lynn I had something like one hundred cases, but a student was perceptively the practitioner.”

Clearly Mrs. Eddy was not consciously aiming for recognition or “success”; she was simply doing what she loved and *BELIEVED* in; consequently success came naturally to her. She would never stop healing. The healing demonstration would always continue to permeate her roles as teacher, author and founder of Christian Science.

The Love Mary Baker Eddy Expressed

In his day, Jesus was condemned by witnesses. But today we believe only what his friends and disciples—who were in a position to know him—said about him. After Mrs. Eddy fulfilled scriptural prophecy and brought forth the “little book” (Rev. 10:2 in accordance with 12:1-5), she too was maligned, persecuted, scorned and condemned. The minds of the people were so poisoned against her that in the early days even patients whom she had raised from the

dead did not speak to her when she met them on the street, so fearful were they of church authorities. Persecution and scorn followed her to the end of her sojourn with us.

But Mrs. Eddy was supremely content in the self-knowledge that, no matter what others might think, she was delivering her message to the world. She was sharing a vision of ultimate reality. The glorious state of mind in which she lived included all goodness, all reality. Being perfectly satisfying, it made lesser possessions, aims, or desires appear paltry and poor.

The testimony that her students and friends bear of her is beautiful—radiant with gratitude and admiration for her loving, unselfish, Christlike life and teachings, which reformed the sinner, gave hope to the weary, and brought instantaneous healing and comfort to untold millions in her day and for forty years following until, through disobedience to her *Manual* directives, the healing waned.

It was with her Mind that was Love itself, that Mary Baker Eddy discovered and revealed the Science that reveals. When Jesus prophesied (John 14:16) the “Comforter” or “Spirit of truth,” he was foretelling Mary Baker Eddy’s great discovery—namely, that the truth he had exemplified in his own life would come as a universal divine Science that all could learn and demonstrate if they accepted and practiced its revelation as the true nature of being.

“You Are There”

In Christ’s Church—“the structure of Truth and Love” in our consciousness—the Mind of man, the only Ego, destroys the belief that man can ever be separated from complete understanding. The hypnotic suggestion that we have to struggle to reach heaven is an error in premise, like the one that caused the detour of those wonderful characters, Moses and Paul. Moses thought he had to make a long mental, “wilderness” journey to reach the “promised land.” St. Paul looked at it as a race to be run (I Cor. 9:24, Heb. 12:1).

In contrast, Christian Science teaches that when a demonstration occurs it shows we have become aware of the harmony that

already exists. When a man suffering from jaundice stepped up to Mrs. Eddy's carriage and asked her, "What is God?" Mrs. Eddy answered, "*GOD IS YOUR MIND.*" As she talked with him the jaundiced condition disappeared. (Spencer: *The Overwhelming Evidence.*)

Calvin Frye's diary records that when Mrs. Eddy was sad, struggling to find her way, a voice told her, "You don't need to struggle, but simply to awaken and see you are there." It is only our ignorance of God that waits for perfection.

Mrs. Eddy used her healing demonstration to lead us to understand the power of our Mind to heal, and to understand our oneness with God. She could heal instantaneously because she had seen that thought externalizes itself, that the body itself is externalized thought. Jesus at the ascension rose, not above a physical body, but above a *material SENSE* of body, showing that, in reality, his body was *thought* and not matter. Our ascension also is to rise above a *material sense* of body.

The one infinite Mind, our real Christ Mind, sees and understands all, but because we are ignorant of what we are as "Mind, Spirit, Soul, Principle, Life, Truth, and Love," we believe the carnal mind's lies that we are separate from infinite good and that we have to wait and work up to perfection. Like Eve we listen to the serpent and believe that both good and evil are real, but we are mistaken; all we have to do is to stop believing a lie and we are through with it. It is the carnal mind, mortal mind, that keeps us in purgatory when we have the right to be in paradise.

In both the life of Christ Jesus and the teaching of Mary Baker Eddy there was a common element intolerable to the carnal, mortal mind. Because Jesus and Mrs. Eddy translated matter into Mind, they were able to behold "in Science the perfect man, who appeared to [them] where sinning mortal man appears to mortals" (S&H 476:32). "The more I understand true humanhood," Mrs. Eddy said, "the more I see it to be sinless,—as ignorant of sin as is the perfect Maker" (*Un.* 49:8). As we follow in her footsteps we too will be able to put aside the carnal, the mortal seeming, and see as Mind.

"The kingdom of God is within you." We learn in Christian

Science that God is our Mind. That is what St. Paul meant when he urged you to let that Mind be Mind to you which was also Mind to Christ Jesus. The only Christ there ever was or will be is the true knowledge of God, of your God-being as “Mind, Spirit, Soul, Principle, Life, Truth, and Love,” which you *are*, as Mrs. Eddy tells us in the first edition of Science and Health.

Mrs. Eddy cautioned her students never to refer to her as Christ. “Christ,” she said, “is the *invisible* and never corporeal. Jesus was a man corporeal. Christ was, is, and forever will be the Holy Ghost...or spiritual idea of God—of your own real Mind. I am corporeal to the senses even as St. Paul was. But God has anointed me to do His work, to reveal His Word, to lead His people...Jesus was the man that was the prophet and the best and greatest man that ever has appeared on earth, but Jesus was not Christ, for Christ is the spiritual individual that the eye cannot see.

“Jesus was called Christ only in the sense that you say a God-like man. I am only a God-like woman, God-anointed, and I have done a work that no others could do...As Paul was not understood, and Jesus was not understood at the time they taught and demonstrated, so I am not. As following them and obeying them blessed all who did that—so obeying me and following faithfully, blesses all who do this” (A Carpenter Item). Desire to do this activates thought rightly and is true prayer. Faith is not what someone has; faith is what someone *DOES*. “Faith (doing) is the substance of things hoped for” (St. Paul, Heb. 11:1). Prayer is not something we say; it is something we *DO AND ARE* as we follow in the grooves laid down by Christ Jesus and Mary Baker Eddy.

Our sublime prayer throughout our hallowed journey will be the prayer Jesus prayed in the garden of Gethsemane: “...O, Father, glorify thou me with thine own self, with the glory I had with thee before the world was [before this hypnotism, this belief of living in a matter body, overtook me.]” (John 17:5).

CHAPTER II

THE LONG ROAD TO REALIZATION

The Image of Mind

From Scripture we learn that the infinite good we call God created man in Its own image and likeness. What is this *image* that God made in His likeness? Since God is Mind, the image of God must be the image of Mind. Of whose Mind? It has to be the image of your real Mind, of the kingdom of God within you.

In the first edition of *Science and Health*, on page 11, Mrs. Eddy says, “mind is universal, the first and only cause of all that really is.” Your real Mind is cause. Isn’t it true that cause must have an effect? This *visible effect* that Mind (your real Mind) produces is the image or manifestation of your Mind. What is this *visible* manifestation of your Mind? It is “man.” We are told that Mind has an embodiment called “*man*,” “which possesses no life, intelligence, nor creative power of his own” (S&H 475:20). Man is shadow, reflection—“which has no separate mind from God [your Mind].”

This *visible* manifestation must be body. Can you move your body, your arm, hand or foot without mind? Can the body do anything of itself? When you are unconscious in sleep can the body do anything? No, it has no life, intelligence nor creative power of its own. What could this shadow, this embodiment that possesses no life, intelligence, nor creative power of its own, be but your body, when correctly seen?

Man is the expression, image, manifestation of Mind. Since this Mind is your Mind, this “man,” this “manifestation,” or “image,” is your body, the expression of your Mind, your mentality. In the first edition Mrs. Eddy writes: “You, the immortal, have a perfect

and divine form.” But this form is not matter, for, as she wrote in *Unity of Good*, “there is no matter.” “Jesus knew that the body is but a reflex shadow of immortal Soul [spiritual understanding, true identity], and that it is impossible to lose this, for, as the Scripture saith, it is the image of God [of your Mind].”

Mrs. Eddy knew that as we learn to see rightly, “Thought will finally be understood and seen in all form, substance and color, but without material accompaniments. The potter is not in the clay, else the clay would have power over the potter.” “As material knowledge diminishes and spiritual understanding increases, real objects will be apprehended *mentally* instead of materially” (S&H 310:6, and 96:27).

God, *your real Mind*, expresses all. But as the potter is not in the clay, so you as Mind are not in what your mind manifests. What we experience as matter must be seen as shadow, having no separate reality but always pointing back to something real as its source. Seen correctly, matter is Mind in manifestation.

It is not mortal man that is wrong, but only the concept of man as mortal! An “image” is not matter or material. “All is infinite Mind” manifested. This is the “man” of Genesis I. It was this understanding that Mrs. Eddy was reasoning out in *Christ and Christmas*, (picture No. 3), when, at night, “with fierce heartbeats,” she sought to find scriptural confirmation for her daytime revelations; and “reason and revelation were reconciled” (S&H 110:15).

“Not as Not in Matter, But As and of Mind”

When Jesus saw his body correctly, he saw a body his thought could put off, throw off. At the ascension he could lay off a mortal, material *sense* of body because he saw his body not as a matter body but as a *thought* body.

Mrs. Eddy told Calvin Frye: “What thou needest to know is that *mortal mind* has translated the body and its functions into matter, and immortal Mind gives back the original with its functions preserved and harmonious, but not as *not in matter*, but *as and of Mind*.” The body will always be tangible, as when Jesus saw and

spoke with Moses and Elias on the Mount of Transfiguration. There, Jesus and the disciples saw and heard “*but not as not in matter, but as and of Mind.*”

Creation is the disappearance of mortal sense and the appearing of God’s ideas. “Mind speaks and form appears.” Mind thinks, and the form, the body called “man,” appears. “Man,” idea, image, is definite, specific, individual, having form, outline, tangibility, quality and quantity as well as color. But this man, mentally created, is only the manifested body, not the *mentality*, just as the painting you paint or the sculpture you create are not the creator. What you are, as Mind, and what you create, man, are not identical; they coexist as cause and effect—“Principle and its ideas are one.”

“In the third degree (S&H 116:4) mortal mind disappears, and man as God’s image appears.” “The grandeur of the word, the power of Truth is again casting out evils and healing the sick; and it is whispered, ‘This is Science’” (*Mis.* 99:28). In this Science God can only be understood through the ideas that express God, namely the ideas that constitute Mind, Spirit, Soul, Principle, Life, Truth, and Love—all of which Mrs. Eddy, in the first edition, tells us we are. There we read: “God and man are Soul [true identity, spiritual understanding] and body [its shadow]....The true relationship of Soul to body is that of God to man....Soul and body, God and man, are inseparable.” There can be no separation between you, (Mind) and your thinking.

Mrs. Eddy makes it clear that there is no matter. Today advanced physical scientists have arrived at the same conclusion, agreeing with Albert Einstein that “matter as matter does not exist.” Therefore your body cannot be matter. *When correctly seen*, the body, man, reflects your mind or thinking, your mentality. It is your thinking made visible.

Shakespeare said, “There is nothing either good or bad, but *thinking* makes it so.” How did Jesus think of his body? He thought of it as good, as mental, so he had complete control of it. He was self-governed—governed by his God-Mind; thus “he made himself the Son of God.” So should we do and be.

The first edition states, “God is not a separate wisdom from the

wisdom we possess.” If we, in our ignorance of God and reality, think of our body as mortal and material, this kind of “thinking makes it so”—makes it subject to sin, sickness, discord, death. If we instead continually think right, healthy, harmonious thoughts and so make ourself “the Son of God,” the body will then show forth health and harmony since the body is the mirror that reflects our thoughts. Thinking of our body as material and mortal we can’t see how it can be the image and likeness of God (Mind), but if we, like Jesus, think of our body as spiritual, perfect, and good, *OUR THINKING WILL MAKE IT SO*; and we will awaken from this mortal *dream*—this mortal existence that is a dream from the womb to the tomb.

What Does the Healing?

Mary Baker Eddy’s writings teach us that “Mind produces all action” (S&H 419:20). Once we understand our God-given dominion, we can impart healthy action to the body.

Healing results from knowing the Truth, from our understanding of our oneness with the Mind that is God—from our wedding to this Mind or Principle that is Love. What does the healing? In her article, “Principle and Practice,” Mrs. Eddy wanted us to see that it is the healer’s understanding of Truth—of the operation of divine Principle, and his application thereof, which heals the sick, just as it is one’s understanding of the principle of mathematics which enables him to demonstrate its rules.

Knowing our mental power we should meet sickness fearlessly. Truth brought to bear on any error, by our *OPPOSITE AND VERBAL ARGUMENT AGAINST ERROR*, Mrs. Eddy taught, begins at once to destroy it. The body, being unintelligent, cannot speak for itself. So, when we argue mentally against an erroneous physical condition or position we can destroy it through mind, even as we have produced it through mind.

As we combat the error and belief of life in matter with the truth that Life is Mind, Soul (true identity), we will form the body anew and it will resume its healthy functions. We will prove that in

reality all is Mind (all is God, infinite good); there is no matter. Nothing is real but God, infinite good, Mind, and Mind's idea. Everything else is hypnotic suggestion, illusion, that disappears when spiritual understanding enters.

“There is no substance in belief. Your matter body is a belief only, hence it is not substance,” Mrs. Eddy declared. “It is a belief in anatomy. Christ held his person all the same when his body was buried; it could pass through matter and walk over matter (water)...but it could have no pain or inflammation in it because it was not in matter...*In the belief that the body is substance is embraced the whole error of sickness and death.* Contest the error and belief of life in matter with the Truth that life is Soul, not sense, and you will form the body anew and it will resume its healthy function” (Carpenter Item).

Nothing Outside Our Thought Can Harm

Mrs. Eddy taught Martha Wilcox that there was never something outside and separate from her thought that could harm her.

“She showed me,” states Mrs. Wilcox, “that the real danger was never this threatened attack from outside my thought where the personality seemed to be, but that the real danger was always within my thought. She made it clear that my sense of personality was mental—a mental image formed in my so-called mortal mind, and was never external or separate from my mind. This supposititious mortal mind outlines itself as a belief of a material personality, with form and conditions, and laws and circumstances—in fact with all the phenomena that are embraced in what is called material life and personality.

“And then she showed me that not one solitary fact in this whole fabric of supposititious evil was true. She showed me that I must detect that all these phenomena were only aggressive mental suggestion coming to me to adopt it as my own thought. [Mrs. Eddy often said: “Error comes to you for life, and you give it all the life and power it has.”]

“She showed me that, because mental practice is mental, *the only place I could meet it was within my own mentality;* and the only

way I could meet it was to give up the belief in a power and presence other than God [my true Mind] or Truth. She showed me that this *WITHIN ENEMY* could never harm me if I were awake to the Truth and active in the Truth...

“After this talk on mental malpractice, Mrs. Eddy opened her Bible and read to me from Luke 16: 10, 11, 12. She no doubt realized that at my stage of growth, I thought of creation—that is all things—as separated into two groups, one group spiritual, and the other group material, and that somehow I must get rid of the group I called material. But during that lesson I caught my first glimpse of the fact that *all right, useful things*—which I had been calling ‘the unrighteous mammon’—*were mental and represented spiritual ideas*. She showed me that unless I were faithful and orderly with the objects of sense that made up my present mode of consciousness, there could never be revealed to me the ‘true riches,’ or progressive higher revelations of substance and things.

“The two lessons I received that first morning were fundamentally great. First, I was to handle mental malpractice within my own mentality. Second, the ‘objects of sense’ when correctly understood, are really ‘ideas of Soul.’ There are not two groups of creation, but just *one*.”

Deal “With Thine Adversary Quickly”

Mrs. Eddy discovered that the only law in existence is the infinite good we call God, the Principle of man which controls man and matter. She urges us to deal with our adversary quickly. To a student she wrote: “To conclude quickly on the treatment of error, was the rule our Master left for casting it out....Banish the temptation, or the disease, *at once* from the mind, and suffer it not to plead in its own behalf....It is not faith but understanding we need in Science, since all discord is illusion. Until personal sense, error, is doubted it will never be controlled.”

Sorrow or suffering is always from a belief, never from reality or Truth, since mind instead of body is the fount of all suffering. *Can*

the body suffer without mind? No! You are therefore a law to your body. You can find and experience the sovereign ever-present antidote for error.

In the case of an accident, “contending you are not hurt, your body, obedient to mental control, will yield to this fact.”

Why? Because “Christian Science recognizes that this Mind is the only lawgiver, omnipotent, infinite, All. Hence the divine Mind [your real Mind] is the sovereign appeal, and there is nothing in the divine Mind to attenuate” (*My*. 108:15).

In Christian Science we learn that the body becomes inharmonious through mortal mind alone. Mrs. Eddy explains, “Fear changes the entire secretions of the system...and the entire mechanism of the obedient body. Remove the fear of disease, and disease will disappear; for the body is restored through a change of mind....Mind is mightier than matter, and controls the body whether we do, or do not, admit this” (A Carpenter Item).

Writing on page 411 of the first edition, in her chapter, “Healing the Sick,” Mrs. Eddy states: “A mother, informed of the imprisonment of her son, instantly falls dead; here organic action has stopped from no other than a mental cause, and yet we are so buried in the rubbish of supposed Life in matter, we cannot, or do not, let this falling apple point to the Principle it reveals.” (See S&H 108:30.)

What is the Principle it reveals?

That your own right Mind is the Principle. Your own right Mind, when free of hypnotic suggestion, free of ignorance of your oneness with God, possesses “sovereign power to think and act rightly” (*Pul.* 3:7). This “sovereign power” is yours through spiritual understanding. It has nothing to do with the Adam-dream mortal personality, which is only hypnotic suggestion and not reality. Of mortal personality Jesus said: “The flesh profiteth nothing,” and Mrs. Eddy said: “I got Mary out of the way.” The sovereign power that is ours is through spiritual understanding only—the sovereign power that comes with our wedding to Truth in which we contemplate and become one with the God character.

We All Need To Wake Up

It is you, *your right mentality*—*YOUR TRUE CONSCIOUSNESS THAT IS GOD, TRUTH*—that does the healing. “Physician, heal thyself.” If you heal yourself, you heal those calling upon you for help.

We all have a lot of waking up to do. “To know we are Soul— [Soul is characterized in Mrs. Eddy’s writings as true identity, spiritual understanding]—and not body is starting right,” Mrs. Eddy tells us in the first edition. “We all must gather more spirituality, more impersonality, more honesty, Truth, Love,” she said. “Accomplish the subjugation of self, and the Love that seeketh not alone one’s own good but another’s good by preferring one another—and you will have dominion over yourself and the earth....” This is what Mrs. Eddy did, and her wonderful healings got the attention of the world.

When we are conscious of Truth, our mentality is the divine Mind or divine consciousness that creates good only. Finding that our own real Mind is God “is not losing man or robbing God, but finding yourself more blessed as Principle than person, as God than man, as Soul than sense” (First edition, S&H, page 227).

Through Jesus’ teaching we discover our identity as Sons of God and learn that we can transcend the death of the material body. Mary Baker Eddy takes us up the next step, revealing the truth hidden throughout the Scriptures, that “immortal men and women are models of spiritual sense, drawn by perfect Mind [our real Mind] and reflecting those higher conceptions of loveliness which transcend all material sense.” She saw there is no God up in the sky; instead she realized *our own right Mind is the only God there is*. Only as we learn spiritually what we already are can we have dominion over all the earth.

The prophets, Jesus, the apostles, and Mary Baker Eddy gave their lives to help us see that right now, in reality, we are one with all that God, infinite good, is. Mrs. Eddy, like Jesus, could say, “I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now.” Just think of what it must have meant to her to see that right now, in reality, we are Mind, Spirit, Soul, Principle, Life, Truth, and Love,

and that our being is composed of the divine ideas that constitute these seven synonyms for God. Because she knew this, she could heal instantly and raise the dead.

To most people, even today, God remains merely a word, a term, something outside of ourselves, outside our own consciousness. God, infinite good, has *not* become a power, a living reality, except to a few great spiritual thinkers.

The purpose of this book is to help us see that *our own Mind is the power for good*—that we need only awaken out of the Adam dream to find ourselves “Mind, Spirit, Soul, Principle, Life, Truth, Love,” which Mrs. Eddy’s divine revelation in the first edition tells us we are. Once we see that “God [our Mind] is the source and condition of all existence” (S&H 181:1) we can say as Jesus said, “All power is given unto me in heaven and on earth,” and as St. Paul said, “I can do all things through Christ.”

Study and Spiritual Growth Necessary

The age in which we are living has not yet developed this spiritual understanding. We still seem to be in the consciousness where the physical is affected by seeming misfortunes, griefs, sickness, death. But we have arrived at the spiritual age, and there can be no new birth except through study and spiritual growth.

The new birth will take place as we thoroughly study the divine system Mrs. Eddy has incorporated in the textbook. This entails a deep consecrated research of the seven synonyms for God and what each synonym means and stands for. These synonyms tell us what we divinely are. There can be no skipping of a few rungs on this heavenly ladder to spiritual understanding. Only a dedicated, hallowed investigation of our textbook—paying close attention to every word—will bring us the spiritual understanding necessary to find what each synonym for God includes as our divine nature.

Eventually, through consecrated study, we will all reach that spiritual plane where the *divine system* is understood and we can use it just as we today use the system of mathematics and music once we

have learned them. We will find the treasure that was ours before this Adam dream overtook us—that was ours “before Abraham was.” Once this system is understood, it will be seen there is only the recognition of the God-character—infinite good. “Then shall [we] press on to Life’s long lesson, the eternal lore of Love; and learn forever the infinite meanings of these short sentences: ‘God is Love’; and, ‘All that is real is divine, for God [*our real Mind*] is All-in-all” (*Mis.* 125:17).

All our efforts and energies of the past and present are working together for our good. The time is coming when we will realize we do not have to beg God for His Love anymore than we have to beg the sun for its rays. James Russell Lowell in *The Vision of Sir Launfal* said, “Heaven is given away and God may be had for the asking.” We must cast out the belief that we are not there yet. Jesus said, “Know that you already have what you are asking for.” But this “knowing” requires study, imbibing the spirit, and application.

Rote learning will not suffice. We must work to understand, or our fate will be like that of the man who bought the preacher’s horse. “I must warn you—this animal only responds to ‘church talk,’” the preacher told him. “Go, is ‘praise the Lord,’ and stop is ‘Hallelujah.’”

“I’ve worked with horses all my life,” said the buyer, “and I’ve never heard of anything like this.” Mounting the horse, he said skeptically, “Praise the Lord.” The horse began to trot. He repeated, “Praise the Lord” and the horse broke into a gallop. Suddenly the buyer saw a cliff dead ahead. Frantic, he yelled “Hallelujah,” and they came to a dead stop a foot from the edge. Wiping the sweat from his brow the buyer said, “Praise the Lord!”

The Printed Word

It is important to have the right words, the right commands, if we don’t want to go over a cliff. We need to place control in something safer than the shattered traditional notions of security. “Man is properly self-governed [and all-harmonious] only when he is guided rightly and governed by his Maker”—your own right Mind, divine Truth and Love (See S&H 106:9).

To help us in this “proper self-government” we need the printed word, that can be studied until understanding reigns and we realize “Thy kingdom *IS* come.” A hundred years ago when Baron Buliver Lytton wrote, “The pen is mightier than the sword,” he could have had no idea how prophetic those words would be. In the Information Age, the ultimate weapon against any adversary is information. The more infinite good is *communicated*, the more it will grow in the understanding of men. For this communication that results in our wedding to God, the printed word—the word that can be *studied*—is needed. In the February, 1932, *Christian Science Journal*, page 657, is an article stating:

Christian Science, much more than any other religion, depends on print rather than on speech. To an exceptional degree, this [Science] depends on the printed word for expansion in the thought of its present adherents and for extension to other people. For this reason, and because Christian Science is both religion [in its right sense] and Science, it requires much use to be made of the careful and correct expression which is most likely to be obtained in print. Indeed this requirement is imperative, not only for expansion and extension, but also for protection and stability.

In our progress we are immeasurably helped by the written record left by those who have gone before. All through the ages there have been spiritually endowed men and women who have known conscious union with infinite good. Moses, Elijah, all the Old Testament prophets, along with Christ Jesus, John, and Paul, were great spiritual thinkers. Though they were not widely known and their teaching was not widely practiced during their own time, their words have come down to us in Scripture to be understood in a new spiritual way in Christian Science.

Truly our Christian Science library is the temple of learning. Even Jesus’ teaching was not understood for nearly two thousand years, until the advent of Mary Baker Eddy and the “little book” that brought the Second Coming of the Christ, as a Science.

The light we have today is the result of the work of the prophets, of Jesus, the apostles, and of Mary Baker Eddy who so faithfully transcribed the great revelation of infinite good's Allness and evil's unreality. Their work is done and ours is before us. It is up to us to grasp it—to continue the struggle of learning to bring spiritual sense and joy into a world of darkness, cruelty, poverty, and misery.

Learning has liberated more people than all the wars in history. Jesus foresaw that the final unfoldment of the Christ would appear in the form of a book. (See Rev. 10:2). Embedded in this textbook is the *system* of Christian Science which must be learned just as the system of mathematics or music is learned, but *learning* the system of Divine Science takes deep consecrated study. "Centuries will intervene before the statement of the inexhaustible topics of that book become sufficiently understood to be absolutely demonstrated" (*Mis.* 92:4).

The task we face takes time, persistence, and the pressure of Truth. In this work let us not forget that "a diamond was a chunk of coal that made good under pressure." When shortcuts tempt us we will do well to remember the experience of the impatient scholar.

Bored with meditation, he asked his guru for a quicker route to self-knowledge. The teacher advised him: "Go out into the rain and lift your arms upward; that will bring you revelation." The next day the scholar complained: "When I followed your advice, all that happened was that water flowed down my back. I felt like a complete fool."

"For the first day, that's quite a revelation," replied the guru.

Let us not be so impatient. However long our journey takes, let us press on. After all, Moses went into the land of Midian and spent forty years of his life in the wilderness, as a shepherd. There he gained the divine schooling necessary for his great future lifework. You and I in our land of Midian, our own "wilderness," may not be sheep herders, but we are getting the training that "helps to precipitate the ultimate harmony" (S&H 324:3).

What is the ultimate harmony? "To learn" the mighty actuality of all-inclusive God, good...and that "nothing exists beyond the range of all-inclusive infinity" (S&H 52:20 and 514:3). Mrs. Eddy has

more than 60 references to “harmony” in Science and Health, and uses them to indicate the true meaning of health: a harmony of ideas moving in the rhythm of Science and system. True harmony is learning to love—like the good Samaritan who loved the man fallen among thieves (meaning all of us). He went to him, and bound up his wounds, pouring in oil—”consecration...heavenly inspiration” (S&H 592:25) and wine—”inspiration, understanding” (S&H 598:17).

Infinite good (God) permits nothing but Its own nature, which is your true nature and mine. The Love and the unity we attest to mark us as Christian Scientists. By loving our brother even when we have differences, we practice and exhibit the holiness of God, as our Leader did. Mary Baker Eddy’s writings pour in the oil of consecration and the wine of understanding which help us follow her lead. Acting on her teaching makes our love seeable, gives it a form the world can observe.

Seeking Understanding of Infinite Good

Mrs. Eddy saw, “The time approaches when mortal mind will forsake its corporeal, structural, and material basis, when immortal Mind [your real Mind] and its formations will be apprehended in Science, and material beliefs will not interfere with spiritual facts” (S&H 402:8). The counterfeit can only come up, as a falsity, a negation, because the Truth is already there. If a truth didn’t exist no lie could be told about it.

“The last appearing of Truth will be a wholly spiritual idea of God [your own right Mind] and of man, without the fetters of the flesh, or corporeality....The daystar of this appearing is the light of Christian Science—the Science [with its system] which rends the veil of the flesh from top to bottom. The light of this revelation leaves nothing that is material; neither darkness, doubt, disease, nor death. The material corporeality disappears; and individual spirituality, perfect and eternal, appears—never to disappear” (*Mis.* 165:7). Why? Because “there is no return to a position outgrown.” Thought must become spiritualized and Godlike in order to apprehend Spirit,

or what we in reality already *are*.

Truth, Mrs. Eddy teaches us, is without beginning or end. What created $2 \times 2 = 4$? It always was. There has never been a creation. Your true being always was. It never "began." Our great, our only need, is to renounce the mortal concept of Life, forsake the perishable, transient sense of things, leave the material basis of belief and unite with the one Mind. All that seems to have a beginning is error, evil, illusion, hypnotic suggestion. All that is really going on is the one and only "I" that I AM, "knowing only [your real Mind's] own all-presence, all-knowledge, all-power" (*Un.* 27:14).

"You are Spirit," infinite good, as Mrs. Eddy revealed numerous times in the first edition of *Science and Health*. All that Spirit (understanding, unfoldment, reality, infinite good) is, *we are*, in Truth. All right mentality is the Father (our real Mind), the primal Cause. "I and the Father [Mind] are one." Mrs. Eddy affirmed, "God is All, and there can be but one All." And, "Nothing exists beyond the range of all-inclusive infinity."

Truth, which in the first edition Mrs. Eddy says you are, is made manifest through revelation, and revelation is, of course, the natural activity of the God-Mind, your real Mind. Therefore the ideas of God rising from a "boundless basis" constitute revelation.

In the first edition of *Science and Health* Mrs. Eddy insists "we are Spirit," "we are Soul," "we are Principle," and "we shall be Life, Truth, and Love when we understand them." This is "Revelation's pure zenith [our marriage to God]." This is Mind's point of view—the point of view from which "The first edition of my most important work, *Science and Health*, containing the complete statement of Christian Science [was written]" (*Ret.* 37:1).

Mrs. Eddy saw that perfection and wholeness are our present state, therefore we should steadfastly *CLAIM* perfection and wholeness—claim every quality and attribute that characterizes God, defined as: "Mind, Spirit, Soul, Principle, Life, Truth, and Love." When we understand these seven synonyms through the infinite ideas of Mind, the infinite ideas of Spirit, the infinite ideas of Soul, the infinite ideas of Principle and the infinite ideas of Life, Truth, and Love,

then we understand Mrs. Eddy's great revelation in the Second Coming of the Christ.

We have not yet understood one-millionth part of what Science and Health reveals. The seven synonyms for God tell us what in reality we are, but our true being and divine nature has been hidden by the Adam dream and by eons of false education. We need *RIGHT* education, because without it we are in danger of taking scholastically-educated people seriously. Jesus told the materially educated around him that they knew not whence they came. But, he said, "I know whence I came and whither I go" (John 8:14). "I came from the Father [Mind] and...I go to the Father [Mind]" (John 16:28).

When Philip said to Jesus, "Lord, shew us [Truth] the Father," Jesus answered, "Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? He that hath seen me hath seen [Truth] the Father" (John 14: 8, 9).

Jesus was trying to tell Philip that good is to be realized; it is not to be achieved. "The kingdom of God is *within* you." All of infinite good is already where you are, just as all of the *round* earth was right where everyone thought the *flat* earth was.

We must learn to turn within and let the imprisoned splendor come into visible being. This is done as Christian Science awakens us from the cruel dream and hypnotic state presently holding us in bondage to the belief that we live in a matter body and can be fearful, sick, sinning, selfish, sensual, sad, or sorrowful. The day is coming, and it will be a great and wonderful day, when we will look to no authority outside our own divinity, our own real Mind.

A Greek legend tells of how the gods, in searching for a place to hide Truth so man could not find it and thereby become their equal, finally decided that the safest place would be where man had never been known to look—within himself.

But today this has changed. Because of the Second Coming of the Christ man *IS* looking within himself. He is becoming aware that God is his own Mind—becoming aware that infinite good is not a separate wisdom from the wisdom we possess—and that "Existence separate from divinity, Science explains as impossible" (S&H 522:10).

Why? Because, in reality, we are wedded to divinity. We are one with it; the Mind that is God is our real Mind.

Mary Baker Eddy's great revelation divorces us from matter, and weds us to infinite good, to that inner realization that causes harmony to appear. "We are Spirit" [a synonym for God], she insists in the first edition, telling us that *our own real Mind is God, and this real Mind that is our Christ Mind is the creator of all*, meaning that which sees "the omnipresence of present perfection." There is no God up in the sky that does the creating. You are not a channel for God. When you know enough, you, like Jesus, can say "I AM the Truth." In reality, you are individual Mind. (See *Mis.* 101:31). "The Christian Scientist is alone with his own being and with the reality of things" ('01. 20:8). Your real true Mind is the only creator (See definition of "creator," S&H 583:20). You are never separated from God. Our wonderful astronauts found this to be true when they walked on the moon. "We were not alone," they reported, "a spiritual presence was there."

Our Christ Nature

Christ is the *true knowledge of infinite good*. There is no other Christ. "Christ [is] the divine manifestation of God [of the Mind that you are], which comes to the flesh to destroy incarnate error" (S&H 583:10). We are to "leave our nets"—leave the search for more and better human good—and have only the Godlike desire to *GROW SPIRITUALLY*.

"Entirely separate from the *belief and dream* of material living is the Life divine," your real state of existence. Mary Baker Eddy has translated our being out of matter into the ideas of Mind. "The three great verities of Spirit [that Mrs. Eddy says you are], omnipotence, omnipresence, omniscience,—Spirit possessing all power, filling all space, constituting all Science,—contradict forever the belief that matter can be actual" (S&H 109:32).

Christ is the nature of God within mankind. Jesus said, "Ye

shall know the Truth [a synonym for God], and the Truth shall make you free.” With these words Jesus confirms our God nature, for you can only know the Truth if you *have or are* the Mind of God.

The infinite good, the Mind that is God, is our real Mind, expressing itself as what is called man, idea, image, likeness. This expression may look like you and me, but it is all God, since “God is All.” God is at once both God and man, both Mind [your Mind] and its manifestation.

The “scientific statement of being” tells us, “All is infinite Mind [your real Mind] and its infinite manifestation.” In this revolutionary knowledge we find the truth about ourselves. This divine Truth solves the basic problem, namely, the belief that man is a person, whereas “man” (in reality) is the divine manifestation of our true Mind. Mrs. Eddy told Mr. Carpenter, “Church Scientists fail to make their demonstration because they believe they are man rather than God.” God’s chosen people are those who understand man to be the full manifestation of infinite Mind.

In *Science and Health* we read, “God [your Mind] is His own infinite Mind [again your real and true Mind], and expresses all” (p. 310:10). This “all” that your right Mind expresses is called “man.” Your real and divine Mind, being the character of God, infinite good, expressing itself, remains itself, but it is one with its manifestation, one with what we call “expression,” “idea,” “image,” “likeness.”

Spirit means the understanding—the understanding of what *YOU ARE*. As we learn the *Science* of our being, we will understand that it is our own “divine Mind, not matter [but our thinking] that creates all identities, and they are forms of Mind, the ideas of Spirit apparent only as Mind” (S&H 505:9).

Mrs. Eddy says, “These ideas of Spirit are perfectly real and tangible to spiritual consciousness, and they have this advantage over the objects and thoughts of material sense,—they are good and eternal” (S&H 269:17), and assures us, “The individuality of man is no less tangible because it is spiritual” (S&H 317:16).

As Reflection, Man Includes the Universe

Looking through the lens of Christian Science—through the lens of Spirit—we realize it is *HOW* we see, not *what* we see that determines our experience. If we are right (good and perfect) in our thinking we will be right (good and perfect) in our experience. This is so because *OUR REAL MIND EXPRESSES ITSELF* mentally in all that is true, right, and good.

It is important to understand that divine ideas do not come *to* you; they originate as the “I that I am,” as God, your real Mind, expressing itself. The more we learn about God, infinite good, and about our true being as Mind, Spirit, Soul, Principle, Life, Truth, and Love, the more the belief that man has existence or mind separate from God fades out. We learn that, as reflection, man includes the universe, and we honor God when we ascribe to ourselves only divine qualities, since God is the Mind of man.

No person, no living being has a Mind separate from God. Genius is asleep in every consciousness, in that “kingdom of God within.” There are many cases where certain mental faculties seemed to be almost entirely lacking and yet have been built up so that they have powerfully buttressed and stimulated the whole character. This was the case of the hero, Forrest Gump, in a recent award-winning movie. He lacked much mentally, but through sterling character qualities, he made it all the way to being honored by the President of the United States.

Animals, too, can demonstrate Mind. Years ago my husband, Bill, and I, took in a young stray dog, and every Saturday for a year we took “Charley” to Obedience School. At the end of that time Charley’s teacher suggested entering him in the current Dog Show. Charley was the only mongrel, and being a bit of everything he was entered as “All-American.” Several hundred people were in attendance. Round after round of applause greeted Charley’s perfect response to commands, and he would have won First Prize, but he failed on the last command. The hall echoed sadness as many voiced regret, exclaiming, “Ahh!” and “Ohh!” in sympathetic disappoint-

ment for the underdog, Charley the mongrel.

Charley's mastery showed him to be a manifestation of Mind, as much as you or I. "God is the Life or intelligence, which forms and preserves the individuality of animals as well as of men" (S&H 550:7).

Because the whole world is inundated in false beliefs, we have to work to learn the truth, just as Charley worked to master his commands. In reality, we as the Principle are the knower, but we have to work to align ourselves with our God-nature so that we can continuously know the Truth.

As man, as image, we can't know anything. "Man," Mrs. Eddy tells us, is "that which has no separate mind from God...that which has no life, intelligence or creative power of his own, but reflects spiritually all that belongs to his Maker" (S&H 475:19). Ask yourself, "Can my image and likeness in the mirror create or do anything I am not doing? Can my image in the mirror change or rearrange anything?" Of course not.

In order to "know the Truth" we must be Mind. You can think, you can create, you have intelligence, you have life. "Life is Mind [your Mind], the creator [you are the creator] reflected in His [in your] creation." You are Principle, constituted of Mind, Spirit, and Soul, expressing itself as Life, Truth, and Love. Man is what God, your Mind, knows about itself. "For I am God and not man" (Hosea 11:9). "I am the Holy One in the midst of thee" (Mal. 3:6). "I [your Mind] am the Lord, I change not; therefore ye sons of Jacob are not consumed."

Two Meanings for Man

Because Mrs. Eddy and the Bible both give or employ two meanings for the word "man," confusion has entered. We must understand that Mrs. Eddy sometimes uses "man" to mean people or mankind, to signify thinking individuals. For example she says, "To become wholly spiritual, man must be sinless." Of course the body cannot think, so it cannot sin or become sinless. Here Mrs. Eddy is speaking about the

individual, and means that to become wholly spiritual, you must become sinless—“the human self must be evangelized.”

Many students wrongly feel *they are only the image*, idea, the likeness, of God. They think they are the manifestation but not the Mind that does the manifesting. They think they are reflection, identity, body, form, likeness, embodiment, instead of seeing that, in reality, in Science, they are *both*—they are the *Mind* that sends forth the reflection, and *as such* are always one with its *reflection* since “Principle and its idea is one.”

What a glory to find we are Mind itself, not merely shadow. That which creates the image, the likeness, the ideas, is our Mind. It pushes new ideas out the door at a record pace and brings into visibility what this Mind, (our real Mind) is. What our true Mind shadows forth—called idea, image, likeness—cannot think or create. As man or image, Jesus said, “I can of mine own self do nothing,” but as the Mind that creates, he said, “All power is given unto me in heaven and on earth.”

God and man are not two different beings or entities, but two views or aspects of the one infinite being. We are the Mind that sends forth the reflection, and so are one with what our real Mind is shadowing forth. Conversely, if we give in to error we become one with what mortal mind is shadowing forth. It is up to us. Mrs. Eddy entreats us: “Know, then, that you have sovereign power.”

In the first edition of Science and Health Mrs. Eddy reveals unequivocally that we are Principle. Because “Principle and its idea is one” (S&H 465:17) we are the idea as well as the Principle. There can be no separation between the Principle that we are, and its idea. They are one, and “*THIS ONE IS GOD*” (S&H 465:18).

God is All. There can be nothing else. Outside of your true Mind which is the Principle that expresses itself in Life, Truth, and Love, there is nothing. Nothing exists outside your own consciousness. All is going on in the kingdom of God within your consciousness. You do not have to reach out for God since the presence of infinite good is within. As you contemplate the invisible power within

you and underlying all things, you stand on holy ground.

Note: This is you as Mind, without corporeality, for Mrs. Eddy defines: “you, *AS APPLIED TO CORPOREALITY*, a mortal; finity” (S&H 599:3). This is why she said she “got Mary out of the way”; and Jesus said, “The flesh profiteth nothing...Of mine own self I can do nothing.”

“In the Beginning”—What?

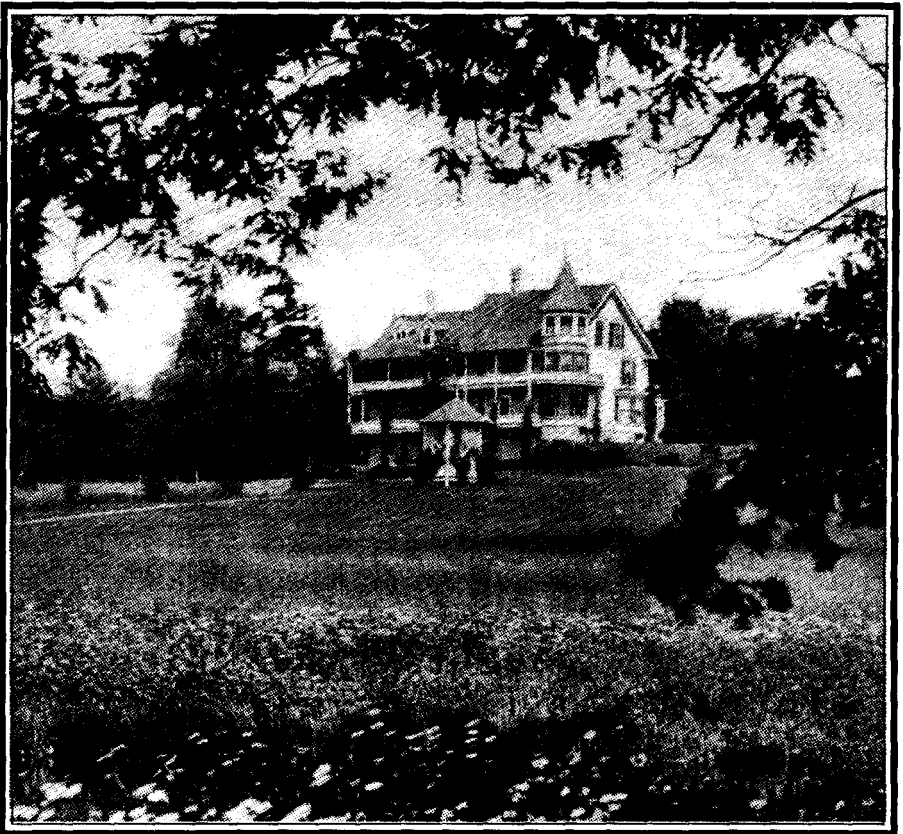
Mrs. Eddy says Genesis and the Apocalypse contain the deep divinity of the Bible. The great secret of Genesis (and of the Bible) is contained in the words “in the beginning.” “In the beginning”—what? In the beginning all that was, was God. In other words, God was your own real Mind, your own real substance (Spirit), your own real identity (Soul); these three—Mind, Spirit, Soul—make up the Principle that *you are*, which expresses itself as Life, Truth, and Love. This was “in the beginning,” and is now and forever. The only Principle Mrs. Eddy acknowledges is God. The entire structure of Christian Science rests on the allness of God as Spirit (understanding), omniscient, omnipresent, and omnipotent.

God’s grace is not far off; it is within you, telling you that what is true of God, infinite good, is true of you as infinite individual being. (See *Mis.* 101:31). God’s grace means the omnipresence of present perfection—that you, in reality, are this present perfection *here and now*. Our real Mind is the creative Principle. The “Son” is that which is visible. The Holy Ghost is divine Science, our divine consciousness. When Jesus said, “I and the Father are one,” he showed us that all that infinite good is, we are, as “infinite Mind and its infinite manifestation.”

When Jesus instructed us that the kingdom of God is within our consciousness, he was teaching that heaven is not a “promised land” to be entered, but is *OMNIPRESENT*. We already have it. Therefore heaven is a state to be acknowledged *as our own being*, here and now. We only need to wake up, get busy and learn what we already are. As we see our identification with infinite good, problems fall

away. You have the power within you to become a giant among the sons of men.

“I have no genius,” said Sir Isaac Newton, “it is only patient, consecrated toil that gives success.” Demosthenes was looked upon as no great natural genius; but his indomitable will, together with labor and industry, supplied the genius. If you have not genius, work. Every affirmation of “I can” and “I will” makes a physical change in the body and gives energy to make ourself the Son of God. When you are defeated, don’t let the world know how your heart hurts; face about squarely, smile, and make another effort. Think, “I can.” Believe in your work, in yourself. As the saying goes: “God helps those who help themselves.”



Pleasant View

CHAPTER III

“BEHOLD, THOU ART MADE WHOLE”

The Yearning for Union

Mind (your real Mind) is immortal and is the *ALL* and *ONLY*. The “cravings of immortal man” (S&H 60:32), the hunger of the human heart for God, the deep desire to know what reality is, are really our prayer for our conscious union, our marriage, with the infinite good we call God. This spiritual hunger is evident in the crowds that gather to hear anything that promises health, healing, and happiness. The yearning for union with the divine, to be wedded to infinite good—this is humanity’s basic longing.

The fairy tales of childhood and the movies of adolescence have misled us. They tell us we will only feel complete when we find the ivory tower princess or dashing leading man with whom we can live happily ever after. Although we may gain many useful lessons in love and forbearance, and grow spiritually through a lifetime partnership with a kindred spirit, it will not satisfy our most basic longing.

We will only satisfy the “cravings of immortal man,” the longing for completeness, when we learn in Christian Science that we were made “*WHOLE*,” as is affirmed five times in the Pool of Bethesda story (John 5:2-15). At the pool of Bethesda Jesus healed a certain man who “had an infirmity thirty and eight years” and apparently could not walk. Jesus caused him to realize that he was *whole*, saying, “Behold, thou art made whole; sin no more” but be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father, your real Mind is perfect.

We are sinless, perfect and complete because we were made so. The wholeness we long for comes not from any union of the flesh, but from understanding our spiritual oneness with infinite good.

This, however, the world will not accept. The carnal mind tells us we were born of the flesh. It believes with Darwin “that Mind produces its opposite, matter, and endues matter with power to recreate the universe, including man” (S&H 547:17).

Under the marginal heading: “Human reproduction,” we read: “From *mortal mind* comes the reproduction of the species, first the belief of inanimate, and then of animate matter” (S&H 189:25). But, Mrs. Eddy tells us, “Mortal existence is a dream of pain and pleasure in matter, a dream of sin, sickness, death; and it is like the dream we have in sleep, in which everyone recognizes his condition to be wholly a state of mind. In both the waking and sleeping dream, the dreamer, [the mortal self] thinks that his body is material and the suffering is in that body” (S&H 188:11). “This mortal sense we must destroy if we would bring to light the wonders of eternal Mind where sense is lost in sight,” the hymn tells us.

The divine revelation that came to our Leader in February of 1866 was “a glimpse of the great fact...namely, *LIFE IN AND OF SPIRIT*; this Life being the sole reality of existence” (*Mis.* 24:15). All of us who have lain long years at the Pool of Bethesda may, through the Second Coming of the Christ, cease to look down and, as incredible as it may seem, may now look up and see Christ, Truth, as our very own Mind, telling us, “Behold, thou art made *WHOLE*.”

You Are Melchisedec

“Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and the spirit of God dwelleth in you?” (I Cor. 3:16). (See also II Cor. 6:16). Your real body is a temple not made with hands, not mortally conceived, not born of the flesh. “Human birth, growth, maturity, and decay” are the mortal seeming that is temporal; they arise from the *material erring sense* of things. Every mortal, material concept we have entertained about the body dissolves in the recognition that our body is the

temple of the living God—timeless, ageless, diseaseless, deathless. That is what Melchisedec proved when he appeared, having neither father nor mother, with no physical process involved in his being.

We meet Melchisedec first in Genesis 14:18, then in Psalms 110:4, and Hebrews, chapters 5, 6, and 7. Hebrews 7:3 says Melchisedec appeared “without father, without mother, without descent, having neither beginning of days, nor end of life; but made like unto the *Son of God*; abideth a priest continually.” Hebrews 6:20 compares him to Jesus, “Whither the forerunner is for us entered, even Jesus, made an high priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.” Just as Jesus “made himself the Son of God” (John 19:7), so must we.

Melchisedec is so important to us because what was true of him is equally true of us. We also, in reality, are “without father, without mother, without descent, having neither beginning of days nor end of life; but made like unto the Son of God.” This is why Jesus said, “Call no man your father upon the earth: for one is your Father [Mind], which is in heaven” (Matt. 23:9). Seeing that “God in the midst of me” is my vitality and strength, I, like Melchisedec, find Life eternal.

Our body, understood from the viewpoint of Mind, will be understood to be the eternal body of light in which there is no birth or death process. Enoch proved this. “By faith Enoch was translated that he should not see death; and was not found, because God had translated him: for before his translation he had this testimony, that he pleased God [understood his oneness with God]” (Heb. 11:5). When Enoch was translated from matter to the viewpoint of Mind he could not be found by the carnal mind because his image or manifestation was a body of light.

It was this eternal body of light that was seen by the disciples on the Mount of Transfiguration, where Jesus, Moses, and Elias stood—their bodies of light visible as they talked with each other; and the three disciples saw and heard. It was this eternal perfect body of light which Jesus again later perceived, at the resurrection and ascension. It is this eternal, perfect body of light which you perceive when you are spiritually illumined, and it is this which ex-

isted as your body before the illusion called birth overtook you. In Part II we will go deeply into this illusion.

Man's Spiritual Origin

Our origin is whole, spiritual; there was never a need for a material origin. Recall that in the first chapter of Genesis there was light before there was a sun; there were grass and "herb yielding seed" before there was a seed. No material source was needed for either, nor is one needed for us. The Adam dream alone leads us to imagine otherwise.

In *Science and Health* Mrs. Eddy defines Eve as: "the belief that the human race originated materially instead of spiritually" (S&H 585:25). Earlier she writes, "The time cometh when the spiritual origin of man, the divine Science which ushered Jesus into human presence, will be understood and demonstrated" (S&H 325:26).

In her article, "*There Is No Matter*" (Un. 31:16), Mrs. Eddy states that her "denial of matter rests on the fact that matter usurps the authority of God, Spirit (understanding); and the nature and character of matter, the antipode of Spirit, include all that denies and defies Spirit, in quantity or quality." God, Spirit (understanding) our only Mind, has created all, "and God saw that it was good."

"In the beginning" God created the heavens and the earth, and all that therein is. Therefore there is only one substance, Spirit, which you *are*, as Mary Baker Eddy tells us in the first edition of *Science and Health*. Any other seeming substance that we think needs to be destroyed, improved, or healed is pure illusion, hypnotic suggestion. There is no substance that needs to be destroyed, anymore than $2 \times 2 = 5$ needs to be destroyed. Just as $2 \times 2 = 5$ only needs to be seen according to the law or truth about mathematics, creation only needs to be seen according to the truth of infinite good.

KNOWING the great truth—that gives to our own real Mind all power—is "the exterminator of error" (S&H 469:13). The more conscious we are of our coexistence with God, the more we hold the mortal picture at bay, and the more duality falls away, for "All is infinite

Mind (your Mind), and its infinite manifestation” (S&H 468:10).

Mrs. Eddy found the *open door* from the sepulchre of matter, into which human birth catapults us. Defining “Veil” (S&H 597:10), she says: “The martyrdom of Jesus was the culminating sin of Pharisaism. It rent the veil of the temple. It revealed the false foundations and superstructure of superficial religion, tore from bigotry and superstition their coverings, and *OPENED THE SEPULCHRE WITH DIVINE SCIENCE,—IMMORTALITY AND LOVE.*”

Our escape from matter and deliverance from mortality comes as we gain the true sense of “*immortality and Love,*” and as we reckon ourselves from the standpoint of I AM—I am “Mind, Spirit, Soul, Principle, Life, Truth, and Love.” What error argues is just “enmity against God,” as St. Paul declared. “Error comes to us for life, and we give it all the life it has,” said Mrs. Eddy. Divine reality is our present state.

Since man has no Mind apart from God, we should always start out from divine reality as Jesus did when he said, “I *am* the Truth [God], I *am* the Life [God]. All power is given unto me in heaven and on earth.”

Be Ye Doers

Divine reality is not a far-off event. The greatness of Jesus was his responsiveness to divine impulse. The measure of any man’s usefulness is the measure of his readiness and fidelity of response to this divine impulsion.

Hearing God’s word is pointless if it is not acted upon. Be ye *DOERS* of the word you heard. All the forces of God’s universe are cooperating with the one who seeks to *DO* infinite good’s will. Daily we should grasp opportunities to promote what Jesus and Mary Baker Eddy taught. Mary Baker Eddy showed us how to *DO* infinite good’s will. Her work on earth is the greatest gift ever given to mankind. Let us do all we can to spread the message brought to us in the Second Coming of the Christ. When we are given little opportunities to circulate, broadcast, radiate, and extend this Word of God, let us grasp them.

William B. Johnson was clerk of the Mother Church and had many personal contacts with our Leader. His son, Lyman Johnson, grasped the opportunity to help the world see Mary Baker Eddy as the scripturally prophesied woman, when, at the request of Mary Beecher Longyear, he wrote his reminiscences, *Early History of the Christian Science Movement*, for preservation in the Longyear archives. But it was not to be buried there.

It was the late 1940s. My cheap alarm clock rang stridently. The train to Philadelphia was wrapped in pre-dawn darkness. It was a chilly morning with a steady drizzle, as though to baptize the God-inspired mission I was undertaking. A week before, Richard Oakes had sent me, under greatest security, his one and only copy of Lyman Johnson's manuscript. He asked me to treat it as though it were the only copy in existence, saying that so far as he knew, it was. Grasping the importance of this sacred history of William B. Johnson's many contacts with our Leader, it seemed to me the only right thing to do was to make copies. Philadelphia was less than a hundred miles away. Learning of an establishment there that could make copies, I was on my way.

I asked the copy company to make three copies. When I went to pick them up, after waiting most of the day, a strange situation faced me. The original was not with the three copies! Evidently someone from Boston was connected with this company and decided to withhold the original. I had to go to the head of the company before the original was returned.

The four copies were heavy, but God provided rain-soaked porters. Tranquil and elated—flush with the triumph of success—I made it to the train.

I shall never forget Richard Oakes' enraptured, jubilant exultation—his delighted, joyous thanks when he heard I had copied the manuscript. When he found I had sent a copy to Rare Book Company (where many copies were subsequently made) his ecstasy was boundless. Today the reminiscence, in book form, in two volumes, is also available from The Bookmark.

What a debt of gratitude we owe Lyman Johnson for his writ-

ing. In the centuries to come his history will be invaluable. His father, William B. Johnson, served Mrs. Eddy faithfully and had her entire confidence. Through him are disclosed essential facts that show the sterling qualities of the Leader to whom we are all so supremely indebted. Lyman's history gives evidence of her tenderness, her love, her patience, her energy, her persistent devotion, her many cares and trials, and her deep appreciation of those who sufficiently believed in her to work under her guidance without reserve, hesitation, or complaint.

Each little unseen act, such as Lyman's writing the "*early history*," done with integrity, can affirm the life hid with Christ, and that act is the one that counts.

One incident in Lyman Johnson's nearly 1000-page book tells of the terrible ordeal Mrs. Eddy faced when twenty-six rebellious students had obtained the Association's books, and withstood the degradation of expulsion for a whole year. Those long and anxious months were for Mrs. Eddy months of deep, intense, thinking. If it were possible for a revolution of such dimensions to break out within the camp at the moment when her movement, far from having a setback, was becoming national in scope, changes seemed to be indicated.

With a courage perhaps unsurpassed in history and an indestructible confidence in her central conviction, Mary Baker Eddy dismantled the machinery which she had for so many years been building up out of tears and hopes. She closed her College, gave up her active teaching, retired from the editorial supervision of the *Journal*, and disorganized the C.S. Association. She left Boston, moving to Pleasant View in New Hampshire, where she "sought in solitude and silence a higher understanding of the absolute scientific unity which must exist between the teaching and letter of Christianity and the spirit of Christianity, dwelling forever in the divine Mind or Principle of man's being and revealed through the human character" (*My* 246:13).

Here, from 1890 until 1908, Mrs. Eddy carried on her great life work in more peaceful surroundings. It was the heartbreaking rebellion of the twenty-six students that caused this needed and Godward change of direction—once again demonstrating that "the very cir-

cumstance which your suffering sense deems wrathful and afflictive, Love can make an angel entertained unawares” (S&H 574:27). William Cooper wrote, “God works in mysterious ways His wonders to perform.”

If you have a vision, even the merest inkling of what God wants you to do, follow it. Just be sure to ask, “God, is this Your will?” God is not hard of hearing. You will receive an answer. Be *DOERS* of God’s word. There’s no telling what you can accomplish, remembering: “All that we send into the lives of others comes back into our own” (Edwin Markham).

There Is Only the Divine “I”

In *Miscellaneous Writings*, page 224, we read that the Emperor Constantine, when told that a mob with stones had broken the head off his statue, said he felt no hurt. Mrs. Eddy indicates that the emperor here represents the Christ idea that feels no hurt, and that the statue represents the human illusion or concept. Just as Constantine was never “in” his statue, just so we were never in the human concept, in the mesmerism of the Adam dream, except in belief.

In I Corinthians 2:16, St. Paul tells us, “We have the Mind of Christ.” When we view man from this standpoint, from our real Mind, we see man, image, as he is—birthless, deathless. It is only when we behold man with the human, mortal mind that we experience the illusion of birth and age.

“Youth,” said Bernard Shaw, “is such a wonderful thing. What a shame to waste it on children.” Wise and witty as he was, he too was locked into the illusion.

There was a 41-year old Irishman who, stirred by patriotic fervor, tried to enlist in the army. The recruiting sergeant saw that this man would make a good soldier, but his rules said he could not accept any man over 38.

“Listen, fellah,” said the sergeant, “are you sure of your age? Suppose you go home, think it over, and then come back tomorrow.”

The next day the Irishman returned.

“Well, how old are you now?” asked the sergeant.

“I was wrong yesterday,” said the hopeful recruit. “Sure, I’m 38; it’s me old mother who’s 41.”

No one need be shackled by limitations based on the illusion of age or any other physical condition. Evil is just the hypnotic suggestion that the divine Mind, our real Mind, is absent. We must strive for the understanding that since Mind is All, there is no other mind to operate. In reality there is only the divine “I.” “In Science, Mind is *one*, including noumenon and phenomena, God [our Mind] and [Its] thoughts” (S&H 114:10).

The Claims of Error Must Be Mastered

In *Retrospection and Introspection* (64:20) Mrs. Eddy warns us: “Since there is in belief an illusion termed sin, which must be met and mastered, we classify sin, sickness, and death [and age] as illusions. They are supposititious claims of error; and error being a false claim, they are no claims at all. It is scientific to abide in conscious harmony, in health-giving deathless Truth and Love. *To do this, mortals must first open their eyes to all the illusive forms, methods, and subtlety of error*, in order that the illusion, error, may be destroyed; if this is not done, mortals will become the victims of error.”

To avoid illusion we need to cleave fast to our Christ Mind, cleave to the fact that Spirit—meaning understanding, substance, reality, unfoldment, order, purity, etc.—is here, and includes the truth about every material object of which we are aware.

What we are looking at, though it seems material, is actually the spiritual seen “through a glass darkly,” which we will see rightly when we overcome the carnal mind viewpoint. Part II will enlarge on this.

St. Paul wrote, “...the carnal mind is enmity against God” (Romans 8:7). Note that the carnal mind is enmity *AGAINST GOD*, not against John, James, Mary, or Martha. We must learn that we do not have a mortal mind that can hate. Jesus showed that man is not a mortal at all, but rather the immortal child of God. The eternal truth

the Master taught and lived included the fact that man is not materially minded, that he is not a mortal independent of God. When Jesus demonstrated that the malice of his enemies could not keep him in a sepulchre, he proved that “Human hate has no legitimate mandate and no kingdom. Love is enthroned” (S&H 454:9).

Our true consciousness is characterized by Christliness because it is God; it is “the kingdom of God within” us. “The three great verities of Spirit, omnipotence, omnipresence, omniscience,—Spirit possessing all power, filling all space, constituting all Science,—*contra-dict forever* the belief that matter can be actual” (S&H 109:32). The material concept is the misstatement of the spiritual. Eventually we will all grasp the truth that there is no mortal creation, no human birth, no sin, sickness, death—that their appearance is illusion. “Divine metaphysics explains away matter” (S&H 278:3). There are no material senses to oppose this, because matter has no mind. Spirit, man’s substance, meaning understanding, can’t be touched by mortal belief, any more than anything can touch a mathematical or musical truth.

Creation Springs from Mind

Mrs. Eddy makes it clear that “All nativity [birth, beginning] is in thought” (marginal heading, S&H 553). Isn’t Mrs. Eddy saying here that all creation springs from Mind through thought activity? In Science and Health she has used the words “thought,” “thoughts” and “thinking” more than 500 times. On page 114:23, we read: “Christian Science explains all cause and effect as mental, not physical.” Subsequently she writes, “Through this action of *thought* and its results upon the body, the student will prove to himself, by small beginnings, the grand verities of Christian Science” (S&H 384:12)

Mrs. Eddy is showing the importance of *thought*, telling us what right thinking will do and what wrong thinking will do. If our thought is divine Love, it will meet the human need.

How many expect a power—some power and presence from outside of themselves—to help them, instead of depending absolutely on their own right thinking? Jesus is our Wayshower. He said: “I *am*

the Truth, I am the Life, I am the light of the world, I am the resurrection and the life. We can say the same when we have learned what we already are. To the centurion Jesus said, “*I will come and heal him....All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth.*” Jesus and Mary Baker Eddy had absolute faith in themselves and in their right thought. They trusted in Truth and had no other trusts.

When Jesus said, “The kingdom of God is within you,” didn’t he mean that within our own right Mind or thought is the power we need in order to have harmony and heaven here on earth? Isn’t this also what he meant when he said, “The Father [Mind, right and true thinking] that dwelleth in me doeth the works”? When we really *BELIEVE* what we say, we will be able to heal as Jesus and Mrs. Eddy did, as many of her students did, as thousands continued to do for nearly four decades after her departure, and as a few are still doing today.

Man Is Experience

How do we come to the full clarity of understanding that Jesus and Mary Baker Eddy had? By studying the Word and imbibing the Spirit.

Man does not experience. He *IS* experience. “All consciousness is Mind” (*Un.* 24:12), and man is Mind’s [your Mind’s] consciousness of itself; man is therefore the full expression of Love. The more we love what we really *are*, the more this understanding will cause limitations and restrictions to recede.

Christian Scientists know that “resurrection” means the putting off of mortality and the putting on of immortality—that is, a gradual growth through study and learning wherein the individual makes a transition from a material condition to a spiritual condition.

We must study and learn Truth up to the point where we realize we are wedded to Principle—actually *ARE* Principle. As Principle *we* are the knower, but we have to learn the Truth to know it. Consider an example from mathematics. We know $2+2=4$. This is a universal fact because it is true throughout the entire universe. It is

also an eternal fact because it never began and will never end. But have you always been aware of this eternal fact? In Truth, yes, but humanly speaking, you had to learn it before it could be a fact in and as your experience. Once you were aware of this fact you could see the evidence of its existence at any moment, anywhere. All that is ever necessary for the evidence to be apparent is for you to focus your attention upon the existing fact.

The universal fact—every universal fact—is within your consciousness, so it *IS* your consciousness. If you are as fully aware that you are the impersonal perfect fact as Jesus *was*, then you can say, “I am the Truth, I am the universal perfect fact.”

Of course, only the consciousness which is God, infinite good, can claim to be God. To experience infinite good, “the pearl of great price,” one must develop the God qualities of joyous determination, patience, endurance, and spiritual illumination.

The student does not forget that Mrs. Eddy has more than 125 references to “learn” and “learning” in *Science and Health*. Before there is the mathematical genius, there is the math student, who must learn addition, subtraction, multiplication, and division—the basics. As we master the basics of Christian Science, our maturing spiritual discernment reveals the universal eternal fact that God is the Father (your real Mind) and God is the Son—your divine Mind’s manifestation.

Mrs. Eddy writes, “A mother is the strongest educator, either for or against crime. Her thoughts form the embryo of *ANOTHER MORTAL MIND*, and unconsciously mould it...Hence the importance of Christian Science, from which we learn of the one Mind and of the availability of good as the remedy for every woe” (S&H 236:12). We are mothers to mortals when we take pen in hand and “declare what the pioneer [Mary Baker Eddy] has accomplished” (S&H vii:25).

Our Character Must Become Godlike

When we look out from the standpoint of Mind, God, we see only the perfect activity of divine Mind. If Jesus hadn’t known man’s present perfection he couldn’t have raised Lazarus or himself from

the grave. In order to accomplish these demonstrations, he had to be aware of man's God-being and present perfection.

To gain this divine understanding, there is a price to pay. We have to "surrender all merely material sensation, affection, and worship." Surrendering this bag full of holes, we find that what "God hath joined together" is spiritual, and not subject to dissolution. This wedlock is the marriage of our humanity with our divinity, *operating AS* what looks like you and me. When we express honesty, intelligence, ability, loving-kindness, etc., these qualities operate as us, as what looks like you and me. Mind, our real Mind, forms and governs. It is the only force. "To understand that Mind is infinite, not bounded by corporeality, not dependent upon the ear or eye for sound nor sight or upon muscles and bones for locomotion, is a step toward the Mind-Science by which we discern man's nature and existence" (S&H 84:19). In this Science we discern man's nature and existence without the concession of material personalities. This is the "house built without hands," as St. Paul says.

What is needed is the acceptance of Truth, and the consequent giving up of a false sense of identity. The concept, *MAN, GOVERNED BY MIND*, is the way out of the mental miasma caused by the claims of evil. "The 'I' will go to the Father [Mind] when meekness, purity, and love, informed by divine Science, the Comforter, lead to the one God; then the ego is found not in matter but in Mind....and man will then claim no mind apart from God" (*Mis.* 195:31).

We are not Christian Scientists until we surrender a belief in a material self. Why? Because the mortal misconception of what we are is a "myth," an "enigma," a "bald imposition," a "ghastly farce," a "dream of pain and pleasure in matter," a "liar from the beginning." Over and over Mrs. Eddy stresses the need to transform the human character, to bring it into line with the character of the infinite good we call God. To achieve the full revelation of Truth, incarnate in the good and pure Christ Jesus, a radical change of consciousness must take place, not theoretically, but actually, right here on earth.

We must lay our "earthly all on the altar of divine Science." We must lay all the mistaken beliefs by which we are mesmerized—the

mistaken personal concept of self and the mortal concepts with which it is loaded—on the altar of divine Science.

Error is always trying to put us on the grill, always trying to singe our squeaky-clean image, always seeking to undermine us, to put us down, even when it seems to be building us up.

I am reminded of a wife reading aloud her husband's fortune card from a scale. "You are a leader, with a magnetic personality and strong character," she reads. "You are intelligent, witty, and attractive to the opposite sex." She pauses, "It has your weight wrong, too."

Mortal mind would likewise have us believe everything about us is wrong—that we are thoughtless, fallible, ignorant, sinful, etc.

When error puts the heat on us we must be mentally active to strike back, shoot it down, and show it up for the farce it is. "All that error asks is to be let alone; even as in Jesus' time the unclean spirits cried out, 'Let us alone; what have we to do with thee?'" (*My*. 211:9). Error left alone is always gung ho to go on an open-ended fishing expedition. "It comes to us for life and we give it all the life it has." We must instantly reject it, turn our back on error and claim the viewpoint of Mind. Do this until it becomes a habit—a habit so strong it can't be broken. Habits are first cobwebs, then cables.

Difference Between Human and Mortal

In one of Mr. Carpenter's morning talks he said that in teaching a class Mrs. Eddy said, "There is a vast difference between the meaning of the words 'human' and 'mortal.' When you become human you are approaching the divine. Jesus was divinely human." Of Jesus, Mrs. Eddy further states: "Through the magnitude of his human life he demonstrated the divine Life." He could do this because he knew that in reality we are all divine beings here and now. But this must be *TAUGHT*. *We must study our textbook to learn what we truly are.* It is only our ignorance of infinite good that keeps humanity in bondage.

Calvin Frye was secretary to Mary Baker Eddy. An entry in his diary states: "*WE CANNOT ASSUME THAT THE READER KNOWS*

WHO HE IS."

Another entry in Frye's diary reads: "Mother said this morning that the dangerous error to students is in not seeing error, insensibility to the presence of error. We must see it, detect it, but see it as unreal, and with a true consciousness of the reality of Being, destroy it. But this result will not be gained by stupidity."

There is a right way: Three pastors got together for coffee and learned that all their churches had bat-infestation problems. "I got so mad," said one, "I took a shotgun and fired at the bats. It made holes in the ceiling, but did nothing to the bats."

"I tried trapping them alive," said the second. "Then I drove fifty miles before releasing them, but they beat me back to the church."

"I haven't had any more problems," said the third.

"What did you do?" asked the others, amazed.

"I simply baptized and confirmed them," he replied. "I haven't seen them since."

Since Mrs. Eddy's departure, much angst, much saber rattling regarding error has taken place, but there has been little action to defang evil, to stem the tide of animal magnetism. Mrs. Eddy warned, "Unless animal magnetism is handled, Christian Science will do very little good in the world," and I might add, we will sink further in an ecclesiastical quagmire in which ancient tangled animosities are largely inexplicable to all but the combatants.

A Christian Science teacher explained animal magnetism in this way: "You know the Truth, and the truth is, that what appears to you as a human being, mesmerized by sin, is in reality the Son of God and divine in being. Now the carnal or mortal mind within your consciousness resists this truth, or contends against this truth, by picturing itself as a personal man mesmerized by bad habits. The Truth or fact in your consciousness, that man is God's presence, is resisted by the misconception of man, that he is a personal mortal, sinning man. Let us handle, that is, make nothing of mortal mind beliefs and mental malpractice. Let us see the nothingness of these bland or aggressive denials of Truth within human consciousness." This is what it means to "handle animal magnetism."

“Never shut your eyes again on animal magnetism while you hold in sense a material body—for animal magnetism will talk to you from without so long as you have this so-called body.” This material body is animal magnetism. But when we give it up we, like Enoch, will find it translated into the body of eternal light. Rightly seen, it is Spirit.

A sign outside a church read, “Sermon for Sunday: What Is Hell Like?” Below it someone had written: “Come in and hear our choir sing.”

How often we create our own hell just where heaven should be!

In Christian Science “hell” is experienced when we do not handle animal magnetism; when we fail to see that error of any kind is unreal. When we don’t say “No,” to error we are like the short-sighted patient who complained: “Every time I drink a cup of coffee, Doctor, I get a stabbing pain in my right eye. What should I do?”

“Take the spoon out of your cup,” was the doctor’s simple solution.

Our solution is equally simple. We usually know the right thing to do. The hard part is doing it. Do immediately what is right before you. Do not say “Mañana.” The universe is as good as we make it, since, in reality, all power is given unto us. All must learn the great lesson that within each one of us lies a sleeping giant—the “kingdom of God”—waiting to be awakened.

Instantly Reject Error

Instantly say to error, “Get thee behind me, Satan. Thou savorest not of the things that be of God.” Error is no part of Anna, Bill, Mary, John, or Martha. We must apply the rules laid down in our textbook. Instantly tell error (animal magnetism), “Scram! Beat it! Get lost!” Give error the old “Heave ho!” and replace it with the truth you have learned in Christian Science.

“You can resist an invasion of armies,” Victor Hugo wrote, “but not an idea whose time has come.” With the Second Coming of the Christ, the ultimate idea has come. Power is given unto us to rid

ourselves of all negative thoughts, to send them back to the nothingness from which they came, since good alone is real.

In the peace tent of divine Love, we learn the basic survival skills needed to confront error or animal magnetism. In plain words, this means we become aware that evil and error are unreal.

Animal magnetism begins by our thinking of life as separate from God. It begins with corporeality as the producer, instead of divine Principle. Animal magnetism is the delusion that error exists as a fact; that sin, sickness and death are the realities of life; that there is a power other than infinite good, Spirit, your real Mind.

Animal magnetism is the supposititious opposite of everything in divine consciousness, and Christian Science is the only “religion” that handles animal magnetism. How? By replacing the belief that man is mortal and a corporeal being—replacing mortal consciousness—with the truth that man is impersonal, immortal. All other religions believe that a mortal is man, something to eventually be made whole and Godlike.

Jesus proved that the man standing before him was the divine man, and that his physical appearance was only the carnal mind’s conception of him. In Truth man is immortal now. When in Christian Science we learn that the so-called human body, seen correctly, is the divine and only body, it ceases to be human to us, and like Jesus—who passed through closed doors—we prove it to be divine. The seeming problem is our imperfect conception of a divine actuality at hand—the human concept or material thing is merely our imperfect apprehension of the divine idea, the only fact at hand. Error, of course, keeps wanting us to have two: a divine idea and a human concept; but it is a lie, “the murderer from the beginning.” Each one of us is consciously an infinite compound of divine ideas. (See S&H 475:14-15).

Animal magnetism means error, false belief, negation, evil, claim, misstatement, misconception. When we replace beliefs with Truth we remove the veil that descended on us with human birth and...that has hidden the Truth. (See S&H 353:1 & 368:1) Only as we find error to be nothing, do we handle it. Mrs. Eddy’s great divine revelation shows us the unreality of life and intelligence in the

body. As soon as a lie is seen to be a lie it has no power or existence.

It is because we are ignorant of the fact that evil is belief only, that it affects us. Jesus said, “the prince of this world cometh and hath nothing in me” (John 14:30). Mrs. Eddy’s understanding of evil’s unreality enabled her to heal instantaneously, and raise the dead. The Mind we now have is the divine Mind, God, and any seeming imperfect thing is always WHOLE, and false belief cannot keep us from knowing things as they are, perfect and WHOLE. (See S&H 253:22).

Animal magnetism’s arguments are lies about infinite good, and we conquer error and everything unGodlike by denying their falsehoods and becoming Godlike in our thoughts and deeds. We must contradict every thought that is not Godlike. Repudiate every negative message. Send it back corrected, as a bank teller did when a robber shoved her a note, which read: “Put the money in the bag, sucker, and don’t move!” The teller added a few words to the note and shoved it back. Her message: “Straighten your tie, sucker. They’re taking your picture.”

When we take error’s picture there’s nothing there! Error proceeds from the evidence before the five physical senses, but the material senses are lies. Handling animal magnetism means crossing swords with temptation—the temptation to believe in error. So, when error knocks, let God answer the door. Protection is never needed against an outside force, but only against *our belief* in wrong. The “one enemy is yourself” (*Mis.* 10:30). We must battle it out with the lying evidence of the material senses. Contradict every whispering or roaring of error with the Truth you *ARE*—the Truth you are wedded to. Rid yourself instantly of every suggestion that is contrary to the truth about God and man. Never ignore error, but handle it as being the liar it is. Send it back to the nothingness from which it came, and declare the truth. Mortal mind, animal magnetism, would put us to sleep. Any suggestion of error is belief only and never an actuality.

Exterminating Error

We “handle animal magnetism” by speaking the truth to every form of error and by *being* Love itself. Let love continually go out to all your thought rests upon; then hatred from those opposed cannot touch you. In the Concordance to Science and Health Mrs. Eddy has five-and-a-half pages (nearly 700 references) on what error is, and how it is to be handled—how we must learn its unreality.

Why is it so hard to conquer error?

“...bidden to the feast, the excuses come” (S&H 130:4). “Excuses are the nails used to build a house of failure.”

Error, evil, is tricky; just when we think we have it cornered, it brings forth another lie in its attempt to deceive us. I am told that “the difference between a hunter and a fisherman is that a hunter lies in wait, while a fisherman waits and lies.” Animal magnetism (error) does both.

When we have learned a manifestation of Truth, we have learned it; but this is not so with error. Error is vastly more complex and difficult to master than is truth. This is true because of error’s evasive, deceptive nature and because of the eons of false education to which mankind has been subjected.

This all makes error seem very real. If we could learn how to uncover and destroy error as quickly as we learn how to grasp Truth, the false *sense* of everything would have been destroyed long ago. “Unwillingness to learn all things rightly, binds Christendom with chains” (S&H 96:2). “Many are willing to open the eyes of the people to the power of good resident in divine Mind, but [as we will see in Part II of this book,] they are not so willing to point out the evil in human thought, and expose evil’s hidden mental ways of accomplishing iniquity” (S&H 570:30). But the strident babble of error which sometimes makes our day hideous will lessen as we persevere in our quest for the Holy Grail of understanding.

“The march of mind and of honest investigation [stoked by the fires of spiritual learning] will bring the hour when the people will chain, with fetters of some sort, the growing occultism of this period

[and the withering invectives emanating from mortal mind]” (S&H 570:1). “Truth will at length compel us all to exchange the pleasures and pains of sense for the joys of Soul” (S&H 390:9). We will see that right where disease and pain seem to be, *right there* is the kingdom of heaven, misinterpreted. “Man is harmonious when governed by Soul [spiritual understanding, spiritual sense, true identity].” (S&H 273:18).

Error Must Be Made Unreal

Jesus was transfigured because he saw error as unreal. There is no error in the infinite good called God, man’s real Mind. “The exterminator of error,” writes Mrs. Eddy, “is the great truth that God, good, is the *only* Mind, and that the supposititious opposite of infinite Mind—called devil or evil—is not Mind, is not Truth, but error, without intelligence or reality” (S&H 469:13).

Because “unwillingness to learn all things rightly binds Christendom with chains” we should be willing to set the torch to every error, at either a public or private bonfire. Put every unethical thought on the pyre. Ask God to reveal to you your secret faults, every error, every sin, so that the man of God can stand revealed. Why? “Because to advance continually throughout time and eternity in the Science by which harmony is given to man,” Mrs. Eddy asserted, “you must perform the most labor with yourself. First be right, here [in your consciousness], then the very atmosphere of yourself will heal the sick. You will, in other words, exhale or throw off God, the Principle that heals wherever you are, and the sick will recover on account of you” (Carpenter Item).

Christian Science commands us to speak the truth to error. In our mental argument we must *contradict* the testimony of error in every instance and in all its supposed sufferings; no matter how benign it seems to be it is always cutting us down. Speak up to it as the patient did to the orderly.

Patient: “This hospital is no good. They treat you like dogs.”

Orderly: “Mr. Jones, you know that’s not true. Now, roll over.”

“Startle your patient’s thought,” Mrs. Eddy said. “Tell them

they are dreaming. They must be aroused from this incubus, this illusion. The error must be made *unreal* to them. All is Mind, and Mind manifested; matter is but a belief, containing no life, truth, intelligence or substance.” (A Carpenter Item). Knowing this, and contradicting error is what is called “handling animal magnetism.”

How grateful we should be to Mary Baker Eddy for helping us find our way out of the quicksand of lies and onto the solid rock of truth.

We Need to be Re-educated in “I Am”

For Truth to work for me, I only need to realize, to actually *believe* what I say and preach. Yet this small step sometimes seems like a huge obstacle. Mrs. Eddy asked: “When will mankind awake to know *their present ownership of all good?*” (*My*. 356:1). The “I am” is what God is, and what we really *ARE*; but in our obstinate ignorance we say: “I am tired.” “I am inept.” “I am afraid.” “I am having problems.” This tendency is so universal that Disraeli depended on it to maintain his social facade: “When I meet a man whose name I can’t remember, I always say (after a moment or two), ‘And how’s the old complaint?’”

We need to be reeducated in “I am,” to learn our oneness with the infinite good we call God. The word “educate” means “lead forth or to draw out.” Scripture names God as “I AM.” All that God is, I am! I need only to draw out from *what I already am*. I and Love are one. The “*I AM THAT I AM*” is wedded to Love.

We never have to keep the circumstances error tries to give us. When this “*I Am*” is explained to the patients who complain: “I am sick, I am discouraged,” etc., and they are made aware that “*I AM*” is God, and is their only *I am*, they likely will be healed, and there will be no need to ask: “How’s the old complaint?”

When we talk back to “the old complaint” it will disappear. Being defeated is temporary; giving up is what makes it permanent. We must get the little mortal egotistical self out of the way. “The egotist must come down and learn, in humility, that God never made

evil....An egotist," Mrs. Eddy says, "is one who talks much about himself" (*Un.* 45:10 and 27:6). (The only nice thing about an egotist is that he doesn't talk about other people. On the other hand, he could be a nuisance if he thinks he knows as much as you do.) Whether we "put down" the self or "talk it up" makes little difference. We must let the ever-present Truth and Love operate, unhindered by our fears, doubts, self-importance, or misunderstandings.

In Treatment, Get Self Out of the Way

In scientific prayer it is God, our true divine Mind, that works and not our mortal sense of ourself, so our limitations or weaknesses are of no account. Our treatment will just be getting ourself out of the way. "I can of mine own self do nothing." We do not have to push every hot button to make Truth work. Let the divine Mind, our real Mind, do the work. This means let the thinking that leads to "knowing" do the work. Jesus said, "Ye shall know the Truth, and the Truth shall make you free." Such "knowing" is done with the divine Mind, our real Mind, the ever-present good we call God. It simply means saying "No!" to error and abiding steadfastly in what Science and Health has taught.

Emma C. Shipman, an early student of Mrs. Eddy, wrote: "The requirements for practicing this Science are not superficial. They must reach to the depths of one's nature and exact the final destruction of all that is not Christian, not based on divine Principle.

"The first necessity is honesty, absolute integrity of thought...There are two ways in which one must know himself. He must be able to recognize his faults, weaknesses and sins. He must also comprehend in some degree the actuality of his true being as the perfect expression of divine Mind. This knowledge of himself enables one to overcome human weaknesses, and manifest in their stead the qualities of God..." (*C.S. Sentinel*, XII (Oct. 30. 1909). Most important: when the leopard of animal magnetism leaps from the bag, the practitioner must instantly deny its lies about our ever-present, all-harmonious God-being, and declare the truth concerning the lie.

“Physician, heal thyself,” says Scripture. Mrs. Eddy taught that a scientific denial and a scientific affirmation are really the same thing but we should never leave a denial without affirmation. It is the *realization of Truth* that heals. If we do not deny error we are apt to put ourselves to sleep. It is the *realization* of infinite good’s allness and the utter unreality of error, that heals.

Stop thinking about the difficulty, and think about infinite good (God) instead. When sorrow and rejection are daily companions, and the cross seems the centerpiece of daily life, look beyond the cross, see the crown, and increasingly lay hold on it. To see the infinite good that is forever in front of us requires a constant struggle. Therefore, go over the seven synonyms for God—Mind, Spirit, Soul, Principle, Life, Truth and Love—and know they constitute your true God-being. Realize that Truth, your manhood is always held in the arms of Love, your womanhood.

The rule is to stop thinking of the trouble, the error, and to start thinking about infinite good. “There is only God to meet me, there is only good to know. This is the angel message that from His grace doth flow.” The belief in a power opposite to infinite good must be withstood, denounced, denied, and overcome. There is a spiritual reversal for every argument of evil, and to declare it, deals “with thine adversary quickly.”

Youth Needs Help in Overcoming

Tuning out error is becoming harder and harder these days, especially for young people. They worry about jobs. Their parents entered a job market still flush with semi-skilled jobs paying decent wages; most of those jobs no longer exist. We are approaching the period when it shall be realized that “man is not made to till the soil [the so-called material channel for supply]” (S&H 517:31). Through Christian Science we are learning “salvation is a gift and not a labor”; no longer shall it be said: “In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread” (Gen. 3:19). Through the Second Coming of the Christ that curse on man is ending. But much Christly work remains to be

done. Our youth and our schools today need our metaphysical help. In the days when I (the author) went to school, drugs weren't in evidence; rules were obeyed. About the most serious school infractions were talking and chewing gum.

But today! In the tidal wave of crime and immorality presently sweeping our land, the most serious problem seems to be an intensely negative spirit, especially among today's youth—a plague of pessimism that has infected millions of young Americans. It is egged on by violence in movies and television programs that dredge up new perversions or human tragedies—guns in schools, gang violence, the sinister traps of skyrocketing teenage pregnancy and drug addiction—and triumphantly display them for all Americans to see and savor.

Omnipresent in the media are frightful warnings—about drugs, sex, pornography, kidnapping, alcohol abuse, etc., on and on, focusing on the rapid growth and increasing violence of juvenile crime. If recent trends continue, ours may be the first society in history that has every right to fear its own children. Television today provides saturation coverage of each new menace and cultural depravity. No wonder, then, that even the healthiest teens adopt the protective armor of cool cynicism—of “not letting anything get to you,” in response to the media's message which encourages both self-pity and fear.

In the face of surroundings beset by bleak poverty, despair and hopelessness, the only alternative for some may be the heartrending example of the little boy covered with bumps, scrapes and bruises. Told to pray, he knelt and said, “Thank you, God, for the places that don't hurt.”

With neglect on the rise, and children treated like Kleenex by abusive parents and ignorant courts, we are going to lose our cities and a whole new generation unless mothers, “who are the strongest educators” can be taught how to teach goodness.

There must be an epochal changing of the guard. Much can be done to head off the crime wave predicted for the future, if we act. Our young people especially need what only Christian Science can give to shepherd them through the so-called perilous teens. Be positive about teens. They need advocates, not critics. We need daily to

include all teenagers, even pre-teens, in our prayers and work for mankind. If we are parents, we need to spend time teaching our children the truth.

“Train up a child in the way he should go: and when he is old, he will not depart from it” (Prov. 22:6). Train youth to see they have dominion over every lying suggestion that evil puts forth. “Error comes to you for life,” Mrs. Eddy said, “and you give it all the life it has.” Children need to know this great truth. We cannot stand passively by and ignore their suffering. We must courageously meet and destroy every error with Truth. In this great battle, “it is not the size of the dog in the fight—it’s the size of the fight in the dog that counts.”

Strength Is Fueled by Love

Because our union with infinite good gives us the ultimate weapon we can meet all obstacles. We gain in happiness, and heal others, when we know everyone we meet needs our knowing what is right about them—when we put them in the kingdom of God and keep them there. Everyone we meet needs our love and affection. When we need faith to conquer error, Christian Science gives us an extraordinary inner strength—a strength fueled by Love, by the Love that in reality is our true being.

The power to bring joy to others is alive and well in all of us. How can we best tap that power? We don’t need to leave that question to the psychologists. We only need to think of the pleasure an unexpected compliment gives us. We know that when people are kind to us it brightens our whole day and we are better at everything we do. Our kindness to others uplifts us as well. It is like a two-edged sword that cuts both ways. As we yield it, both we and those we aid are helped Godward.

Each one of us is incredibly unique. There is no one else like you. I must see that you have something to give me that I could not get in any other way. If we see each other as God in disguise, as the Mind and manifestation of infinite good, we will treat each other accordingly.

It may be tempting to shrug off the pain around us. Two psychiatrists met at their 20th college reunion. One was vibrant, while the other looked withered and worried.

“So what’s your secret?” the older-looking psychiatrist asks. “Listening to other people’s problems every day, all day long, for years on end, has made an old man of me.”

“So,” replies the younger-looking one, “who listens?”

Fortunately, most psychologists are deeply compassionate people who *LISTEN* carefully. Turning away, not listening, only makes the situation worse. We need to turn away from error, not from each other. We must turn to each other positively by affirming the good and true in the world and in each other. All a person who is hurting may need from us is the time, the attention, and the love it takes to *LISTEN*.

Work from the Principle, Not the Problem

In Christian Science we work out from God, our real Mind. We work from the Principle and not from the problem. Ephesians 4:6, speaks of “one God [Mind]...who is...in you all.” If we maintain our conscious union with God—our marriage to infinite good—through realization that “I and the Father [Mind] are one,” we open the way for the activity of God to flow out of us and also to flow into us through anyone and everyone receptive and responsive to the God-impulse.

Here Mrs. Eddy’s words can help us: “Work, work, work, watch, and pray.” That is our job; it doesn’t matter how menial or grandiose that work is. “There are no menial jobs, only menial attitudes.” On page 100 in *Miscellaneous Writings* we are told: “Pure humanity, friendship, home, the interchange of love bring to earth a foretaste of heaven....Who remembers that patience, forgiveness, abiding faith, and affection are the symptoms by which our Father indicates the different stages of man’s recovery from sin and his entrance into Science.” Our contact with a person who can play a part in the unfolding of our unity with God, is our contact with God.

“For since the beginning of the world men have not heard, nor

perceived by the ear, neither hath the eye seen, O God, beside thee, what he hath prepared for him that waiteth for him” (Isa. 64:4). But through the teachings of Jesus and Mary Baker Eddy, God’s two witnesses, we can perceive, hear, and see the truth about ourselves.

As early as 384-322 B.C., a most remarkable man named Aristotle wrote: “As the tree is drawn by its inherent nature, power, and purposes toward the light, so the world is drawn by its inherent nature, power, and purposes, which are God. God is not the creator of the material world, but its energizing form; He moves it not from behind, but as an inner direction or goal, as something beloved moves the lover...God is pure thought, rational soul, contemplating itself in the eternal forms that constitute at once the essence of the world and God.”

Aristotle seems to have glimpsed our self-completeness in God, a self-completeness made manifest as the harmony and abundance of all we see, as we realize Christ, Truth, is our real Mind, and Love is our only nature.

All Beings Hunger for Love

“Thou wilt shew me the path of life: in Thy presence is fullness of joy; at Thy right hand there are pleasures for evermore” (Ps. 16:11). The Science of Love is what we need to learn and accomplish. It means Life, and is the corrective for every discord, every emergency.

All people hunger for love. This was brought home to me many years ago by little four-year old Billy who went shopping with me and wanted everything he saw. When I said, “No, Billy,” he apparently interpreted that as meaning he was not worthy and not loved. When we got home he crawled onto my lap crying; and between horrendous sobs, quavered, “All I ever wanted was to be loved.” He was only four, but he put into words the deep hunger in us all.

There is not a person on earth who needs anything but Love. Let’s throw down the gauntlet to all that is unloving, unGodlike. Are there walls or boundaries to the love we express? Knock them down. Mrs. Eddy did. For example, she notes, “Beasts as well as men express Mind as their origin,” and there are many records of her healing them.

The greatest gift in the world comes not with price tags but with love.

In my last book I mentioned that my husband and I have always been involved in animal welfare work, and I have been happy to hear from people who gratefully commented on this work for animals.

Jesus and the Fallen Mule

The world is a better place for animals today than it was in the time of Jesus. An old Coptic fragment, published by Julius Bohmer in 1903, describes our Lord and his disciples walking in the country. There they found a mule, fallen under its burden, while its master was still beating it.

“And Jesus said, Man, why dost thou beat thy animal? See thou not that it is too weak for its burden?”... But the man answered and said: “What is that to thee? I can beat it as much as I please since it is my property.”...But the Lord said, “Do you not see how it bleeds, and hear you not how it laments and cries?” The disciples said, “Nay, Lord, we hear not that it laments and cries.” And the Lord was sad and exclaimed, “Woe to you that you hear not how it cries to the Creator in heaven, and cries for mercy. But three times woe to him, of whom it complains and cries in its distress.” And the Lord came forth and touched the animal, and it arose and its wounds were healed. And Jesus said to the man, “Now, go, and beat it no more, that you also may find mercy.”

It has been said that kindness is more important than wisdom, and that recognition of this is the beginning of wisdom. It is heartening to notice that most people have stopped seeing animals as “things,” and more often treat them as living beings, even according them the care one would give a beloved child.

For instance, today pet insurance has become popular. People crave the love their dogs give them. They no longer feel any shame in paying for it. A front-page *Wall St. Journal* article (Feb. 1, 1996) states that five times last year Fido “ate all or part of a tennis ball, and five times he had surgery. The unkind cut was the bill—\$800.00 a pop.”

Pet insurance saved Fido. Hundreds of thousands of dogs to-

day, facing mounting medical costs, would have been doomed to the deep sleep, except for dog medicare. Kidney transplants, pace makers, dialysis, cataract surgery, are today routine for dogs. Aggressively treating a long bout of pet cancer can cost \$10,000.

Humorously speaking, plastic and cosmetic surgery may be in the offing for dogs. Chin lifts, tummy tucks, nose jobs, receding hairline, and baggy eyelids removal—these and everything else humans have and do to surgically cheat the mirror, dogs may expect as they find out that working hard and being a good watch dog won't get you anywhere unless you also *look good* at all costs.

Seriously though, the bond between humans and animals is often far from superficial. Once on a flight to Europe I sat next to a man on his way to do business in Sri Lanka. I told him I was going to visit the dog cemetery at Hyde Park in London. He said his dog was buried in the New York City Cemetery. I asked, "How long ago did your dog die? He said, "Six years ago today." He was crying.

Not many of us know how to receive love so deeply that we can do nothing but cry. But all too many of us know the pain, the heartache that accompanies the loss of a faithful pet. The day came when mercy dictated that our much loved Charley, having reached the probable age of 20, should be put to sleep. For eighteen years Charley had lent his floppy ears to Bill's confidences as they walked together early in the morning and late at night. Now it was time to take their last walk. As we helped Charley into the car for the last time and for the last time shut the door after him, tears streamed down our faces, even though we knew our heavenly Father was waiting to open the divine door, and royally welcome our beloved Charley to Life that knows no death.

Love One Another, That all May Be One

Under the heading of "Soaring aspirations," Mrs. Eddy writes: "Animals and mortals metaphorically present the gradation of mortal thought, rising in the scale of thought, taking form in masculine, feminine, or neuter gender" (S&H 511:25).

Some day love will have so completely overcome cruelty and

fear that all the creatures will love and help us, and we will love and help them. “Beloved, let us love one another: for love is of God” (I John 4:7). “That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us” (John 17:21).

The respected physician and author, Dr. Larry Dossey, states that “empathy, compassion, and love seem to form a literal bond between living things.” He relates the following story: “A young boy found a wounded pigeon in his backyard. He nursed the bird back to health and gave it an identification tag. The next winter the boy suddenly became ill, and was rushed to the hospital two hundred miles away. While he was recovering from surgery, he heard tapping at the window. The boy summoned a nurse to open the window. In flew the same bird. Pigeons are known for their homing ability, but this bird was traveling to a place it had never been before! Love had drawn it there,” concludes Dr. Dossey.

Love comes naturally to children, and they have much to teach us. A four-year old neighbor’s boy, Gregory, often came to visit. After sitting on my lap to watch television, he would presently say: “I have to go now, Helen, but we’ll get married in the morning.” That was in the 1950s when dear John Morgan, a student of that great “wheel,” John Doorly (see Ezek. 10:13), was visiting and giving lectures on Christian Science. Little Gregory listened attentively to John’s pronouncement that God heals the sick. The next day he called on John, and screwing up his courage to the sticking point, announced: “John, my father is much too smart a man to trust God. When any of us are sick, he calls the doctor.” His stalwart defense of his father demonstrated a love that comes much closer to the God-character than his words let on.

Spirit and Letter — Misconceptions Regarding Medical and Temporary Help

Let us take a lesson from little Gregory. As we diligently pursue understanding, let it never be at the expense of compassion. In

infinite good, love is never separated from Truth, but all too often on the human plane we find the “letter” pursued at the expense of the “spirit.” The result can be tragic, and is not Christian Science.

Misguided Christian Scientists who fail to heal their children and who refuse to call the doctor when a child is seriously ill have done a great disservice to the Christian Science movement. To clarify, I will repeat what I wrote on pages 47-49 of *Humanity’s Divinity* under the headings “Compassion Must Temper Our Zeal,” and “A Place for Temporary Means”:

“There is no place in Love for the arrogance shown by those in power and authority, who penalize desperate Christian Scientists for seeking ‘temporary’ help.” It totally contradicts Mary Baker Eddy’s teaching. But for some reason certain church members feel any help from the medical establishment is no less dangerous than the threat of a nuclear bomb. It is particularly deplorable when seriously ill children are involved, depending on Christian Science practitioners who clearly do not have the understanding necessary to meet the case. A lapse of judgment can leave in its wake serious, even fatal consequences.

Our Leader explicitly states: “Christian Scientists are harmless citizens that do not kill people either by their practice or by *preventing the early employment of an M.D.*” (‘01. 33:29). But some Christian Scientists have somehow fallen into the false notion that resorting to medical aid—when no help is obtained from a Christian Science practitioner—is similar to making a deal with the devil—to be repudiated as soon as possible. Science and Health states plainly: “If Christian Scientists ever fail to receive aid from other Scientists...God will still guide them into the right use of *TEMPORARY* and eternal means” (S&H 444:7). In *Christian Healing*, page 14:10, we read: “If you employ a medical practitioner, be sure he is a learned man and skillful;...In proportion as a physician is enlightened and liberal is he equipped with Truth, and his efforts are salutary.”

In the face of this compassionate advice and admonition from our Leader, those in the ‘seat of great authority’—meaning all who withhold temporary help, especially in the case of children when a practitioner is unable to meet the case—are committing a mental

crime. It is a grave misconception that Christian Scientists are forbidden to seek medical care. Much harm started with the ecclesiastical authorities in Boston who, *CONTRARY TO OUR LEADER'S INSTRUCTIONS*, punished Christian Science teachers and practitioners they caught seeking medical help.

This neanderthal ecclesiastical dictum has given the *enemies* of Christian Science a handle—a handle to scramble and haggle over every fault and trespass—as their juggernaut moves forward in a last ditch effort to harm Christian Science. The enemies of Christian Science are trying to make it look, to all the world, that trusting God's healing power is eerie, suspicious, sinister, menacing. Never do these enemies of Christian Science mention the millions of children *lost* under medical care, or the millions of cases *healed* in Christian Science.

Mrs. Eddy Was Ever Practical

In the case of childbirth Mrs. Eddy is reported to have said, "Having a baby is a very human, mortal affair; why try to squeeze the doctor out."

Regarding dentistry, in a work called *Repaid Pages*, copyrighted by Mrs. Eddy on November 2, 1896, Mrs. Eddy stated: "In dental surgery, if the thought of the operator was turned from faith in his process and he held the belief that I would suffer without his prescription and dwelt upon the contemplation of this suffering, I should feel the antagonism of his mind toward my spiritual attitude, and it would affect me more than if he worked materially and left me alone to my own spiritual attitude of sensation and scientific existence. In other words, *his ether would hinder my scientific attitude less than his mind* would if fixed on my sense of suffering without his ether. Hence Jesus said, 'Suffer these things to be so now, for thus it becometh you to fulfill all righteousness,' and so 'he was baptized of John.' To attempt the absolute demonstration of Truth in its intermediate stage is to delay its ultimatum in the minds of men. Hence the impracticability of undertaking to prove the entire power of the infinite to finite thought, and before your own thought has

grasped all that is practical and has demonstrated what you know is true of the divine Principle which governs....” (*E.O.F.* page 62-63). A wise Christian Scientist remembers that saying of our great exemplar, “War not with ten thousand against twenty thousand.” We are at the beginning of our journey, in belief, not the end.

“While Christian Science is equal to any emergency, the Christian Scientist may not be!”

Acknowledge God’s Omnipresence

As we go forth seeking the healing understanding of our oneness with infinite good, let us carry love as our lantern. From the instinctive loyalty of animals, to the innocent affection of children, to the illumined love demonstrated by our Leader, Love lights the path by which we go forth from unreality to reality, bringing error more and more under siege, as humanity’s divinity comes to light.

Love shows us perfection is ours *NOW*. In this perfection of being “there shall be time no longer.” There is no more time—neither past, present, or future—in real, eternal being, than there is time, past, present, or future in the truth that $2 \times 2 = 4$.

Since our own Mind is God, we live in a state of “isness.” Harmony *is*. Since all that God (Mind) has is ours, we are always in a state of nowness. Scripture is redolent with references such as “now is the accepted time” “now is the day of salvation” “the hour cometh and now *is*.” As Mrs. Eddy reminds us: “So-called mineral, vegetable, and animal substances are no more contingent *NOW* on time or material structure than they were when ‘the morning stars sang together.’ [The kingdom of infinite good is spread throughout the earth and no man seeth that it is his own real Mind].... The periods of spiritual ascension are the days and seasons of Mind’s creation, in which beauty, sublimity, purity and holiness—yea, the divine nature—appear in man and the universe [*now*] never to disappear” (S&H 509:20).

“Dwelling in light [the light that I AM] I can see only the brightness of My own glory” (*Un.* 18:4). “It is Truth’s [the Truth that I am] knowledge of its own infinitude which forbids the genuine existence

of even a claim to error” (*No.* 30:18). We do not have to bring good into being, we only have to acknowledge its omnipresence. We never have to heal anything in a “material universe,” we only have to get rid of the *material sense* of the universe. Then, as someone said, we will have Life “everlaughingly.”

Love brings us into right relationship with our Principle. The only relationship numbers have with each other is through their principle. And so it is with man. Man’s relationship is only with his Principle. “As the reflection of yourself [as man, as that which is God made visible] appears in the mirror, so man, being spiritual, are the reflection of God [infinite good]” (S&H 516:2). Your reflection in the mirror has no relationship with other reflections. Can your real Mind, the Mind that is Love, ever see anything but its own reflection? No, because that is all that is. Ultimately “The Christian Scientist is *alone* with his own being and with the reality of things” (*’01.* 20:8). You have only one enemy, “and this one enemy is yourself” (*Mis.* 10:30).

When a mathematician corrects a mathematical error, it is not *his will* that makes the correction. It is the mathematical *truth* he knows and applies. The power of correction is inherent in the mathematical truth, not in the will of the mathematician. By knowing the Truth, we reflect the Truth and bring it into action in our consciousness, *as* our consciousness. This is why changing our consciousness changes our body. As we continue to learn, we find that “sorrow is the harbinger of joy. Mortal throes of anguish forward the birth of immortal being; but divine Science [is at work and] wipes away all tears.” (*Un.* 57:25).

Only hypnotic suggestion and thousands of years of false education hide this great spiritual fact from us. But today in Christian Science the reality of all things is being brought to light. The Second Coming of the Christ is rousing us out of the hypnotism of the Adam dream in which we have slumbered so long.

CHAPTER IV

“DIVINE LOVE IS MY SHEPHERD”

Awakening From the Adam Dream

What must we do to wake up? How do we follow Jesus who “made himself the Son of God”? How do we enter into the divine Marriage? What must Mary Baker Eddy’s awesome revelation in the Second Coming of the Christ—in the “little book” open in the hand of the angel—teach us?

It must teach us the God-character, how to *be the divine Love*—how to become aware that the Mind that is Love is our real Mind. This Love then becomes our “shepherd” as we realize it is our own real Mind that has all power. Having the Mind that is God as our Mind, we “shall not want” for health, happiness, wholeness. We shall not want for intelligence, ability, the will, vitality, vigor, or the spiritual energy to move forward. We shall not want for the enthusiasm to do what needs to be done. The word enthusiasm comes from the Greek and means “God within.” That God within is abiding Love—the proper love of our divine self, and from that, love of others.

When the carnal mind’s suppositional siege seems to persist mercilessly, we shall not want for the ability to impersonalize error, to see it as a lie about God, the all-knowing Mind that is our real Mind. We will be alive, awake, aware to be our own best friend and not fall into the trap of being our own worst enemy. Our work—in wooing the unchurched into our mighty fortress—is to do and illustrate, teach and practice all that will impersonalize God, man, and woman.

“I shall not want” means more than being able to pony up for the children’s college education; it means much more than timely help when we can’t put more spending on our credit cards because

we've maxed out on cash advances. It really means I shall not want for needed intelligence, for ability to perform that which is given me to do. I shall not want for health, harmony, wholeness, joy, peace, trust in good, or any God quality.

In times of great pressure we must realize: that which brought the work to me, performs it. Error doesn't need to be healed anymore than $2 \times 2 = 5$ needs to be healed—it only needs to be seen as a lie. The divine Love, which I am, impersonalizes error and destroys it.

Resolving Things Into Thoughts

We must see and become aware of our divine Principle, Love. We are this divine Principle; and this divine Principle, Mind, reflects Itself in ideas. Whatever concept we hold in mind we will bring out. This is why it is important to learn the truth about ourselves and about all humanity.

Mrs. Eddy tells us, "Evil has no reality. It is neither person, place, nor thing." It is essential here to understand that evil does not refer just to bad or unpleasant conditions. Our Leader often uses the words *evil* and *matter* as synonymous, and she makes no distinction between pleasurable and painful matter. Both are evil, unreal. Many of us have not yet learned that the apple from the tree of knowledge is both *PLEASURABLY* and painfully evil.

Good matter is still the chief of the world's gods. In Christian Science we must see that good material conditions are no more real than bad material conditions. Both must be seen as nothing, but good matter is more subtle and harder to turn away from than evil matter. Denial of the claims of matter requires discipline and is a great step toward the joys of Spirit, toward human freedom and the final triumph over the body. Discipline and freedom go hand in hand.

By denying the existence of matter we can destroy the belief in material conditions. But the "existence of matter" cannot be denied until we have been taught the concept of spiritual substance. "Mind [alone] is substance." Matter held as substance is illusion. Matter must be held as shadow—a shadow that always points to something

real. We first have to see that “Metaphysics resolves things into thoughts, and exchanges the objects of sense for the ideas of Soul” (S&H 269:14). When the things we are looking at (the objects of sense) are rightly seen—seen as spiritual ideas, ideas of Soul—they are translated, that is, become one with infinite good.

The Trail Winding Heavenward

Right, Godlike, thoughts are *true substance*, spiritual substance. As we prime the pump with these true thoughts and pipe Christlike music into our campaign to think Love, “be Love, be nothing but Love,” we will find, “there is only God to meet me [on the trail that winds heavenward]; there is only good to know.”

There is truth in the old saying: “What lies behind us and what lies before us is not as important as what lies within us.” Within us should lie desire to become Godlike. In the search for the Holy Grail, for Godlikeness, *luck is not chance*. It’s toil. It comes as we avoid resentment and self-pity and persistently get up one more time after being knocked down. As we work to bring ourselves into accord with our God-being we will do well to remember that “perseverance is the hard work you do after you get tired of doing the hard work.” Today’s greatest labor-saving device is “tomorrow.” This is why *mañana* is often the busiest day of the week. It’s easy to sit up and take notice. What’s difficult is to get up and take *action*. Aristotle declared: “Moral excellence comes about as a result of habit. We become just by doing just acts, temperate by doing temperate acts, brave by doing brave acts.” He knew the best things in life aren’t things, and that we can’t become what we need to be, by remaining what we are, for “infinite progression is concrete being.”

Giving love makes us powerful as well as happy. Grateful acceptance of love heals us. “To love and be loved is to feel the sun from both sides.” There is no guilt that enough love will not bridge, no pain that enough love cannot soothe. When we “put on the whole armor of God,” we know the truth not only for ourself but for *all* mankind. “The rising tide [of our consciousness] lifts all ships.”

When we know the truth, we no longer sentence ourselves to the dark little dungeon of the ego. There can be no hate or hurt feelings anywhere when we realize the omnipresence of infinite good and become aware that our own real Mind is Love.

When we behold in the mirror of Science what we really are, we can love ourselves, and thereby love another. Then our simple presence can make others happy. We will seek happiness for others and find it for ourselves also, for “the hand that gives, gathers.” Being kind, we will not yawn or fall sleep when others are talking to us. And we will know when well-timed silence is the most meaningful expression. We will not be like the man the Apostle James speaks of, who looking into a mirror and beholding what manner of man he is, straightway forgets. We will find it easy to follow James’ admonition, “Be ye *DOERS* of the word, and not hearers only.”

Feathers! Feathers!

Putting “on the whole armor of God” raises us above the illusion of a matter world and takes us into the safe and secret place of “the Most High.” A friend said she had been dwelling all day on the 91st Psalm which says, “He shall cover thee with his *feathers*.” That night, walking home alone after the Wednesday evening church meeting, she was accosted by two men who tried to snatch her purse, which she held tightly as she tried desperately to think of the 91st Psalm. In her consternation she could remember only one word of it, “feathers,” and she loudly shrieked, “Feathers! Feathers!” One of the men said, “The dame is nuts! Leave her alone,” and they turned and disappeared into the shadows.

The 91st Psalm has helped many. Mamma and Papa read the daily lesson together and always finished it off with the 91st Psalm. After one of these sessions, Papa decided to cut down a big tree that was blocking their view of the water. As he stood daydreaming—as he often did—the tree fell in the opposite direction from which he had planned. Terrified, he ran frantically, repeating the 91st Psalm. The tree landed in such a way that he was nestled snugly between two

huge limbs. Papa rose safely, leaping and praising God for the wonderful protection. Whenever he told of this “deliverance from the snare of the fowler,” his face beamed and his voice flowed with gratitude.

These two deliverances followed years of study and discipline. They remind me of an event a friend said was forever etched in his memory. The incident pitted a giant eagle against a tiny mottled brown waterfowl and her brood. The eagle swooped down again and again on mamma murrelet and the four chicks that paddled behind her. Riveted by this David-and-Goliath drama, my friend said, “I held my breath, sure on each pass the eagle, with its lethal talons, would snag one of the babies. But every time the eagle dove, the intrepid mother signaled impending danger and in unison the family went submarine. Then like corks they popped up and swam on. Eventually the frustrated eagle gave up,” my friend continued and added, “We applaud the mother murrelet’s courage, but it took more than courage to save her chicks. It took *discipline*. Sometime earlier, she had taught her offspring to obey her. And because they now followed her instructions, they lived to swim another day.” In just the same way, as our hearts become obediently receptive to the heavenly discipline, we will be helped in time of danger.

A State of Thought that is Love Itself

We see God working in the most unusual places. Being part of God’s kingdom means giving people what they need. *Just be there*. Today give others your friendship; let them rest in your love and care. Work for “a little more grace, a motive made pure, a few truths tenderly told, a heart softened, a character subdued, a life consecrated [for this] would make manifest the movement of body and soul in accord with God” (*Mis.* 354:15).

“Just be love.” In the high state of thought that is Love itself, “I shall not want” for a loving ear to *listen*. Rather than giving advice to someone in emotional pain, I will listen. I will *JUST BE THERE*, to love and serve. I shall not want for words to express the ideas that are needed to awaken and lead me and all mankind out of the Adam

dream. I shall not want for the good manners to make people feel good about themselves.

As you and I become aware of the divine Love that *we already are* (because in reality we are one with infinite Love), we “shall not want” for the heavenly harmony, the peace, the joy, or the consecration necessary to *realize*, become aware of, this Love. Love is our present Mind and consciousness, hidden only by hypnotism and by eons of false education. As you and I learn and gain this divine Love, through mighty wrestling with hypnotic suggestion—as Jacob, when *alone*, wrestled with error—it becomes the “shepherd” that “maketh [us] to lie down in green pastures, and leadeth [us] beside the still waters” of the immeasurable sea of possibilities where unfathomable Mind is expressed.

As the first light of dawn stretches across mortal mind’s darkness, and a window of opportunity appears, let us not pull down the shade. Open up to let in the Love that restoreth spiritual sense. Our spiritual sense is restored as we wed ourselves to the message of the “little book,” open in the hand of the “mighty angel.” The “mighty angel is the God-Mind of Mary Baker Eddy who wrote the “little book.” By loving Truth and seeking first the kingdom of God, we will “restore” our recognition of what we divinely are and find this kingdom of God within our consciousness.

The Love that I, in reality, Am “leadeth me in the paths of righteousness for His name’s sake.” Mary Baker Eddy saw that the only thing that mattered was *GAINING THE GOD-CHARACTER*. That is why she at first called her great discovery “*Moral Science*.”

“The Pearl of Great Price”

Peace, love, joy, based on our oneness with infinite good, constitute “the pearl of great price.” We have peace, love, joy because we are conscious of our oneness with infinite good. We must strive to gain this desirable state of thought even if it means parting with everything else we have, if necessary. In this seemingly material world we do not come naturally by spiritual riches, spiritual educa-

tion, any more than we come naturally by mathematical or musical education. The true riches have to be learned.

Mary Baker Eddy said: "Our land of Canaan lies before us." Let us go in and possess the land, and claim every Godlike quality. Let us claim our infinite, harmonious, Christ-expressing selfhood; acknowledge it, accept it. No one else can do it for us. Let us *feel* it. "How can we have dominion over the whole earth unless we *feel* that the whole earth is ours?" We can feel that the whole earth is ours by taking seriously the statement that "God is individual Mind" [your real Mind] (*Mis.* 101:31). Life is Mind, the omnipresence of infinite good. Therefore, "though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil: for [Love is] with me."

For those who have lost the one dearest to them, "there is no death although we grieve when beautiful, familiar forms that we have learned to love are torn from our embracing arms. They are not dead. They have but passed beyond the mists that bind us here, into a new and larger life of that serener sphere. They have but dropped their robe of clay to put their shining armor on. They have not wandered far away. They are not lost or gone.... Ever near us, though unseen their dear immortal spirits tread; for all the boundless universe is Life—there are no dead." —John McCreey.

Love is "with me" because in reality I *AM* that Love; the one Mind that is Love, is my real Mind. Only Love can clear my sight and enable me to see correctly. Mrs. Eddy speaks of "Love bruised and bleeding, yet mounting to the throne of glory in purity and peace, over the steps of uplifted humanity." To uplift humanity by helping even one individual understand who he is and what he is, is the greatest thing in the world. Make him realize that he is God in disguise; he has to be, since "God is All." As he learns the "system" to which Mrs. Eddy reduced divine metaphysics in Science, he will demonstrate God's Allness.

The Cardinal Point of Difference

What is the cardinal point of difference in Mrs. Eddy's metaphysical system?

“This: that *BY KNOWING THE UNREALITY* of sin, disease and death, you demonstrate the allness of God [of your real Mind]. This difference wholly separates my system from all others. The reality of these so-called material existences I deny, because they are not to be found in God [infinite good, our real Mind]” (*Un.* 9:28).

Since consciousness outpictures itself, if we want something better than what we have we must change our consciousness. Our Mind is the only power. We must learn what is true about us. “Our cross is our own consciousness of evil.” As Bicknell Young once said, “It is on this cross that we have nailed ourselves all these years. We crucify ourself, and at the same time call to be taken down from the cross.”

We must disregard the appearance, take our attention away from the appearance. Place attention on God, infinite good, and shout for joy that we have learned that only good is real. You and I are standing on holy ground. Nothing is impossible to you once you realize that your own Mind is God—that “the kingdom of heaven is within you.”

In the first edition of *Science and Health* Mrs. Eddy taught us that we are Principle, namely, the Mind that is Love. “It is unnecessary to go anywhere or change anything to find the glories of God [your own real Mind],” she insisted. “We need only open our eyes to spiritual reality; to the omnipresence of God, good, which is always available to us,” because it is what, in reality, we are.

Daily, in her life, Mary Baker Eddy knelt in prayer, praying first to gain revelation, and then to have her students understand the great truth about themselves. When her opposers descended on her with lethal designs, she descended to her knees in prayer. Great thinkers like Dr. D. L. Moody have claimed that “every great movement of God can be traced to a kneeling figure.” With the strokes of her pen, she altered millions of lives, opening for them, the door to heaven. Vision, courage, and dogged perseverance are the bedrock qualities demanded of us, as they were of Mrs. Eddy, and we will learn them best on our knees. “The warfare with oneself is grand,” Mrs. Eddy tells us. Put it into high gear. Exercise your dynamic authority. It will drive every difficulty right out of your consciousness.

Healed Here and Now

As we overcome the mortal self and put on the God-character, we find ourselves healed and able to heal others. St. John declares, “And the Word was made flesh.” As we study and learn, our understanding manifests itself in better seeing, better hearing, better health and greater happiness. What value would all our study and learning be, if it didn’t manifest itself in better human conditions and happiness? This better tangible manifestation is “the Word made flesh.”

Wholeness of body and mind, and the ability to heal others are natural consequences of the understanding of Christian Science. Often, though, we seem to turn our backs on these gifts.

All good is forever here and now in Christian Science, and promptness in handling any claim of error—seeing it as nothing—is especially important. “In the figurative transmission from the divine thought to the human, diligence, *promptness*, and perseverance...carry the baggage of stern resolve, and keep pace with highest purpose” (S&H 514:14).

In handling a claim for what it really is, namely, hypnotic suggestion, *promptness* is nine-tenths of the victory. The *first five seconds* are most important. Mrs. Eddy urged her students to cultivate promptness. We are always presenting some good reason or excuse for not doing what should be done promptly. “The nature of the individual, more stubborn than the circumstance, will always be found arguing for itself,—its habits, tastes, and indulgences” (*Mis.* 119:11). The solution is to turn away from self and focus on our oneness with infinite good.

“Love [the Love that, in reality, I am—the Love that I express] prepareth a table before me in the presence of mine enemies.” What is this “table” that is prepared in the presence of mine “enemies”? This “table” is the truth—the truth that what looks like an enemy is really our best friend.

Why is what looks like an enemy our best friend? Because it wakes us up from the Adam dream. It forces us to work to know that only good is real, that error is hypnotic suggestion, since “God is

All.” We are the world we walk through, and we can never see anything but our own “think” since “God is [our] individual Mind” (*Mis.* 101:31). To paraphrase a great poet, our so-called enemy may “draw a circle that shuts us out, but Love and we have the wit to win; we can draw a circle that takes him in.” That circle is Christ Jesus’ and Mary Baker Eddy’s great revelation of good’s allness and evil’s nothingness—the “table prepared for me in the presence of mine enemies.”

The “table” that Love prepares enables us to forgive. “Forgiveness extricates you from someone else’s nightmare and allows you to live in a state of grace. Once you forgive, you are no longer handcuffed to the person who hurt you.” Forgiving instills a sense of power. In marriage two forgivers insure happiness. Mrs. Eddy, like Jesus, *forgave and treated her enemies with a forbearance unparalleled in human history.* We will never know how much she loved us *UNTIL WE OVERCOME OUR ENEMIES WITH LOVE.* Jesus said that if the good man of the house had watched, his house (consciousness) would not have been broken into. If we watch the world with the eyes of Love—and manifest Love—our house will be safe.

Knowing that I live in divine Love, I have no enemies. My only enemy is myself, my false view of what I am looking at, when I look through the veil of the mortal eyes.

Mind Made Visible in Symbols of Love

As Christian Scientists, it is our privilege to see in every material possession a symbol of our Father-Mother God’s love and care. Seeing things that way will keep our thought alive with intelligent perception and love of infinite good, God, in every phase of human living.

To see material objects and activities merely as material is to see them as dead. In the 1960s the materially-minded saw everything as material, and roundly advertised: “God is dead.” But 50,000 social workers arose to take God’s place, and life went on. Advancing in Science we come to see material objects and activities as representing, on the human plane, spiritual ideas and activities. We see the normal affairs of daily existence as full of Life and Love.

Christian Science teaches that your Mind is invisible, but it is made visible as what is called man. The “scientific statement of being” declares, “All is infinite Mind [your real Mind] and its infinite manifestation [that which is seen].” St. Paul declared: “The *invisible* things of Him from the creation of the world are *clearly seen*, being understood by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Godhead.”

Mrs. Eddy's Sense of Beauty

A student asked Mrs. Eddy, “Is it correct to say of material objects that they are nothing and exist only in imagination?”

Mrs. Eddy replied: “...My sense of the beauty of the universe is, that beauty typifies holiness, and is something to be desired. [‘Beauty is the shadow of God on the universe.’] Earth is more spiritually beautiful to my gaze now than when it was more earthly to the eyes of Eve....Even the human conception of beauty, grandeur, and utility is something that defies a sneer. It is more than imagination. It is next to divine beauty and the grandeur of Spirit. Beauty lives with our earth-life, and is the subjective state of high thoughts.” Again she said, “If you have beauty in yourself, you can put it into anything....I wish I could tell you what I see when I look at a rose.”

What else does Mrs. Eddy say about the things that “are *clearly seen*”?

In *Miscellaneous Writings*, page 87:3, Mrs. Eddy writes: “To take all earth’s beauty into one gulp of vacuity and label beauty nothing, is ignorantly to caricature God’s creation, which is unjust to human sense and to divine realism.” Everything you look at, if seen through the eyes of God, Mind, reality, is the very incarnation of God, infinite good. Christian Science teaches us how to behold rightly, how to see what is really there, regardless of what material eyes and ears see and hear.

Matter is Mind appearing—Mind made visible as matter. This world is not the illusion, it is the concept we entertain of it that is an illusion; it is our *material sense* of things that testifies erroneously.

Looking with spiritual vision we behold the man whom God (your real Mind) made in its image and likeness. We have a spiritual body *NOW*. Touching Adam Dickey's arm, Mrs. Eddy, declared, "Adam, this is Spirit." (Adam said he couldn't understand. Was it merely coincidence that his name was "Adam"?) Mrs. Eddy knew we will never have a more spiritual body than we have right now in reality. We need only to get our eyes opened.

Matter correctly viewed is Mind appearing—Mind made visible as what looks like matter. From infancy we have had ingrained in us the notion that the material is the real, not knowing that we were dealing with universal hypnotism. But with spiritual education our concepts will change and rise above the material into a realization of the spiritual. Once we perceive that the *MATERIAL SENSE* of the universe—that which Jesus called "this world"—*is really an illusion*, we will know why Jesus could overcome it. "It is our ignorance of God, the divine Principle, which produces apparent discord" (S&H 390:7). Knowing the truth about the universe will cause harmony to show itself in an understandable language and form.

The Glory of God's Creation

What we behold through the physical senses is an illusion. Does this mean that there is nothing there? Not at all! Behind every externalized form there is more than the human mind comprehends. To the man in the street the statement, "There is no matter," standing alone and independent of Christian Science teaching, suggests that everything we see—the entire creation—is nonexistent. In Truth, Christian Science teaches that all things, from the least to the greatest, are *real*, if perceived spiritually as infinite good made them.

We will see things as they really *ARE*, as we learn what God is. In an article, "Do Christian Scientists Ignore the Material Universe?" Alfred Farlow writes, "A Christian Scientist, having some insight into the spirituality of God's creation, beholds in nature a new beauty and satisfaction. As one grows spiritually, the things on earth will not disappear, but will become more vivid, even as an object beheld

through a veil presents fairer and stronger outlines when the covering is lifted. The perishable, imperfect things which we now view will be discerned in all their spirituality, beauty, and perfection as our erroneous human concepts disappear. Nature will be seen bearing the imprint of the divine Mind, the supreme Being. St. Paul seems to have grasped this idea when he said, ‘For if that which was done away was glorious, much more that which remaineth is glorious.’” *Christian Science Sentinel* VI (June 11, 1904).

Our present earth and heaven are constituted of what we feel, see, hear, taste, and smell. But we will grow out of even this pleasant bondage. Through study and spiritual growth we will reach the glory of supersensible Life. Spiritual growth is not merely the most important thing; it is the *ONLY* thing. Spiritual growth comes as we refuse to give life to error, but instead dismiss error as universal hypnotism, mesmerism, suggestion. Hypnotism presents a mental image, but that image is always without cause, substance, or law; and when we dismiss it, saying “Get thee behind me, Satan! Get lost!” the image that hypnotism has conjured up disappears, and we see the true in its place.

Christian Science heals by awakening us to what we already *ARE*. “The belief that God has a separate being leads to multitudinous errors” (S&H, first ed.). In the Adam dream man thinks he lives in a matter body. Mary Baker Eddy’s teaching in the Second Coming of the Christ has made matter as matter obsolete, illusion only. The day is not distant when what mankind believes today will be considered the grossest superstition. Material creation, birth, age, discord, disease, death will be totally obsolete, as we bask in the glory of God’s (our real Mind’s) creation.

Quieting Mortal Mind, We Hear God

Mrs. Eddy hammered home that “God [infinite good] is *ALL*”; “Life is God and God is *ALL*” (S&H 366:29); “God is *ALL* and He [infinite good] is Mind” (S&H 532:24), and “Since God [infinite good] is *ALL* there is no room for [infinite good’s] unlikeness”

(S&H 339:7). There is not God *AND* man. There is only God, your real Mind manifesting itself; “All is infinite Mind [infinitely manifested]” (S&H 468:10). Therefore, “Let this mind be in you which was also in Christ Jesus...who thought it not robbery to be equal with God” (Phil. 2:5).

Scripture admonishes: “Be still, and know that I am God.” Since the activity of the human, mortal mind is the substance and activity of hypnotism, when this mind is quieted—when we are in stillness, and realize that in reality God, infinite good, constitutes our being—we will simultaneously realize error’s nothingness, since nothing exists that is not God. Your own real Mind is God, in Truth and reality. As we still mortal mind, we hear divine Mind’s message.

One of Mrs. Eddy’s helpers, Mr. Irving C. Tomlinson, having been taught to keep in thought at all times that perfection is our present and constant status, gave us a secret, not only for reshaping the moral landscape and acquiring spiritual growth, but also for establishing good relationships and making life beautiful. He knew that we cannot make people over. We can only change ourselves. Our business is to make ourselves better and others happy. Knowing that in this we are twice blessed, he wrote:

“I have learned how to make Science a thing of life, not of words—and I am going to tell you this wonderful secret:

“It is not to see, hear, or repeat any kind of imperfection. It is seeing, hearing, and repeating good and good only, at all times, under all circumstances, in spite of everything that appears to the contrary. I make this resolution every morning when I first open my eyes, and review it every hour of the day. I see perfection, perfect cause and perfect effect, perfect God and perfect man. I refuse to make any kind of exception; I refuse to admit any imperfection in myself, in my friends, in my so-called enemies, in the affairs of the world.

“I take my radical stand every day for the perfection of God and everything and everybody He [infinite good] has made. I look upon the world with God’s eyes and see it as [infinite good] sees it. I refuse to see it in any other way. I stop a dozen times a day to renew the resolve and be sure I am not repeating error, giving way to fear

and criticism. I watch all my thoughts about people, the lame, the old, the unlovely to sense, that I pass, and the stray animals.

“I have taken my radical stand for the perfection of all things, and I will not, I absolutely will not, release the perfect standard. The result has been marvelous. Try it and you will forget to wear your glasses; they will become unnecessary. You will be seeing with God’s eyes, and you will behold a perfect universe. The outward conditions are pictures of our inward thinking. To change the picture, one must change the thoughts that produce the picture.”

How often we suffer the most painful circumstances, not seeing that our own thought is causing them. We are like the drunk who blacked out, falling with his face in some Limburger cheese. Later coming to, he staggered along, moaning, “Ain’t it awful! Ain’t it awful!”

“What’s the trouble?” someone asked.

“Ain’t it awful!” said the drunk, “The whole world smells!”

The Power of Love

Christian Science calls us to unleash and enact the goodness already within us. As we do, we transform not only the world but ourselves. Every suggestion of error must go on the chopping block. Our love stops gossip; there is nothing busier than an idle rumor. Love teaches us to talk slowly, and not too much. We were born with our eyes closed and our mouth open, and we should spend our whole life trying to reverse that mistake. Blessed are they who have nothing to say and can’t be persuaded to say it.

Love reminds us that nothing lasts forever, not even our troubles, and makes us willing to listen to what God is saying, not forgetting “our Father’s hand is at the helm.” The world, bone weary with its frustration mentality—discouraged, divided, embattled—becomes newly laced with hope, and its atmosphere alters as it feels our unpremeditated love. A sign on a building undergoing repairs, said: “Pardon us while we change to something more comfortable.” We all need to change into something more comfortable than listening to error’s constant prattle.

After being with someone who loves you, someone who *knows* you, you feel a healing influence in body and spirit. Healing signifies a change of consciousness, not a getting rid of symptoms. Healing is removing what stands between us and God. It is the awareness of the presence of Love. Let's be this Love. It's the only way we become aware of the God-character we already are but which is unrecognized.

Never doubt how vitally important, how precious you are. Appreciate yourself, be kind to yourself, and know the difference your being here makes. Ecclesiastes tells us to keep on sowing our seeds, for we will never know which will grow—perhaps it all will. There are so many things we can give—which cost nothing but can mean much to others—appreciation, encouragement, affection, sympathy of the right sort, respect, and gratitude for their friendship. Let people know you have faith in their ability to perform any needed task.

We have to credential ourselves as the party of Love. We honor God when we ascribe to ourselves only divine qualities. *Feel I AM WORTHY*. Long ago Confucius said: “Five things constitute perfect virtue: gravity, magnanimity, earnestness, sincerity and kindness.” Closer to our time, dear Albert Einstein wrote: “A human being is a part of the whole that we call the universe, a part limited in time and space. He experiences himself, his thoughts and feelings, as something separated from the rest—a kind of optical illusion of his consciousness. This illusion is a prison for us, restricting us to our personal desires and to affection for only the few people nearest us. Our task must be to free ourselves from this prison by widening our circle of compassion to embrace all living beings and all of nature.”

Gaining the Spirit of Love

If we follow Mrs. Eddy's example and teaching, we will not perish; we will conquer with spiritual understanding and intelligent kindness. Science and Health has effected a revolution in the minds of thinkers. This revolution is for real; as high-profile cultural warriors, we must pay our dues, namely, seeing with God's eyes.

We can't be too careful about what we hold in thought concern-

ing others. Seeing a drunken man, Mrs. Eddy said to her companion: "If that is the man I see, then that is the man I am." If we see error in others we are not viewing them as Jesus and Mary Baker Eddy taught us to do. We must refuse to behold what error wants us to see about others, and instead right there behold the man of God.

How can we "be not only sayers but *DOERS* of the law"—of God's Word? (See *My.* 125:2). By seeking first the kingdom of heaven and God's guidance. Be a risk taker. Lynda Beams says, "Many people don't want to speak out because they are afraid of being criticized. The only way not to be criticized is never to say anything and to never do anything. And you're probably going to be criticized if you do nothing. If you're going to become a doer, you must become accustomed to hearing the word 'no.' You are going to hear the word 'no' much more than you're going to hear 'yes.' To get from point A, where no one knows you're alive, to point B, where they wish you weren't, persevere."

William Wilberforce opposed the slave trade on religious grounds. He was opposed by vested interests that said, "Things have come to a pretty pass when religion is allowed to invade public life." But Wilberforce was a doer, and persistence won. Mother Teresa, another doer, tends to Calcutta's dying not because she enjoys holding the bodies of filthy and diseased people, but because she believes God told her to.

Over a Bowl of Soup

Listening for what God tells us can lead to important action. One day several years ago a friend, who is not a Christian Scientist, dropped in. She asked me what I was doing, and I told her I was writing a book to acquaint more people with what Christian Science is and what Mary Baker Eddy had accomplished. Over a bowl of soup, I gave her a synopsis of Mrs. Eddy's accomplishments. In her computer business my friend often helps grandparents write up their life stories for their grandchildren. As I proceeded with my digest on Mary Baker Eddy she said, "Helen, why don't you put out a little

pamphlet for the world, recounting just what you've told me? My computer can print it for you." The result, after much work, was a 99-page booklet, and a 44-page pamphlet, both called *MARY BAKER EDDY, LEADER FOREVER*. With the help of friends 44,000 of these pamphlets have since gone out into the world. The whole process was edifying and joyous—the joy of acquainting the spiritually hungry with Mary Baker Eddy's great revelation.

We will succeed in our endeavors if we “forget those things which are behind” and address our thought to the eternal *NOW*, not to the dead past. Good, loving, true thoughts alone have power. Envy and hate, that would try to stop divine activity, flee when confronted with Love.

Whatever error in our mentality hinders us from reflecting love—such as sensitiveness that quickly takes offense, or self-pity, or a tendency to exaggerate another's faults while justifying our own—must be overcome as we learn to love. *TO GAIN THE SPIRIT OF LOVE IS WORTH MORE TO YOU AND ME IN THIS LIFE THAN ALL THAT A MATERIAL CONCEPTION OF BEING CLAIMS TO BESTOW*. The spirit of love helps us immeasurably in establishing the kingdom of heaven on earth. The panacea for all wrongs, trouble, strife, Mrs. Eddy realized, was having one Mind and loving others as we would be loved. “Just *BE* Love,” she told her last class.

Driven by compassion, we must know and declare the truth about those we love; help them see themselves as one with God, infinite good. This could be called “Operation Blessing.” Let's recognize infinite good in all whom we meet or deal with—know they can't be anything but what infinite good is. This will free us from wrong conceptions, and save us a lot of trouble.

To help us in the valiant struggle to continually watch our thought, Amaryllis Hyde has written:

And God requireth that which is past
Not just the past years,
And past months and days,
But even the past moments,
And the very moment gone before.

JUST THINK OF IT! This means
 No accumulation of tired years
 With their regrets and tears,
 Their burdens and bondage;
 No unhappy memories
 Of yesterday's sorrows and strife;
 No sharp anguish
 Over the previous moment's
 Failures and fears, but only NOW—
 This fresh new moment—
 With its opportunity
 To do righteously.

—(*C. S. Herald*, Dec. 1977, Vol. 75, No. 12, page 506)

The Art of Loving

The art of living right is to love. To love is to behold everything from the standpoint of Truth in its undivided oneness. Realize that man is Principle in operation—the Principle that you are. Since the highest motive in living is to exemplify divine reality, we save ourselves much trouble when we believe the best of everybody.

All that is good is found in our own being—"the kingdom of God is within you." For this reason we should avoid self-depreciation: "I can't," "I'm not," "I never," "If only I were." How harsh we often are to ourselves, holding ourselves in bondage to our own seeming shortcomings instead of impersonalizing them (as we do for our neighbors).

I recently read about a grandmother who all her life had been self-conscious about her crooked teeth. When she looked in the mirror, she saw graying hair, trifocal glasses, wrinkles, and crooked teeth. Then one day a six-year old granddaughter came to visit. Looking up from her bowl of cereal, she said, "Grandma, you're so nice and so pretty. When I grow up I want to be like you." Caught up in her old insecurity, the grandmother replied, "Oh, no, Mary, I'm not

pretty—not with these crooked teeth. But I’m glad you love me anyway.” That night, at bedtime, little Mary turned to her grandmother suddenly and in a fierce tone said, “Grandmother, you *ARE* pretty, *AND SO ARE YOUR TEETH!*” Little Mary’s forthrightness jolted her grandmother. For the first time in her life she really *DID* feel beautiful, and she hugged Mary and told her so.

Seen with the clarity of love all people are beautiful. “I am fearfully and wonderfully made” (Ps. 139:14). Shortcomings are only a false concept, a misinterpretation of the divine reality *I AM*. We must not let the belief of heredity relieve us of responsibility for our shortcomings; we must stand forth in our divine heritage of freedom, aliveness, and perfection.

Self-depreciation puts us on a low level. It will do it to us every time. It is always a step backward. The key is to concentrate on what we do have, not on what we seem to lack. We must play the cards we are dealt, keeping in mind that, as *one with God*, we have been given every good gift. Every hurdle crossed is one less hurdle in our pursuit of the Holy Grail, spiritual understanding. Our textbook leads, and consoles “the weary pilgrim, journeying ‘uphill all the way.’”

Let your self-talk be free of condemnation. When it becomes necessary to correct others, land on them as softly as a butterfly with sore feet. Teach them to learn from their mistakes, and forget them. “That’s why pencils have erasers.”

True happiness is found in serving rather than in being served, in loving instead of seeking love, in giving, not getting. Only as one helps others, does he truly help himself. Kindness and sharing should be as natural to us as they are to little children.

A woman in line at a bank held a toddler who was eating a roll. The child thrust the roll through the bars at the teller, who smiled and shook his head.

“No, no, dear,” exclaimed the boy’s mother. Then, turning to the teller, she said “I beg your pardon, young man. Please forgive my son. He’s just been to the zoo.”

Neither generosity nor humor need embarrass us. Let’s remember, “there are *WIT, HUMOR, AND ENDURING VIVACITY AMONG*

GOD'S PEOPLE" (*Mis.* 117:11). In an article, "Humor, Happiness and Healing," Alan Young begins, "How often have we seen a frightening situation transformed by a humorous remark? By humor, tension is relieved, the impact and self-will are softened, resentment and bitterness are quenched, and the way is paved for better relationships. In the art of humor one never accepts or describes a picture in the way the senses present it."

Humor brings a moment of release and relief. A student recalls: "In no time he had me laughing and learning." A person without a sense of humor is at the mercy of everyone else, but casual good humor will see you through most difficulties and there is something cleansing about laughing till you cry. Let's laugh easily, especially at ourselves. "A merry heart doeth good like a medicine" (*Prov.* 17:22). Humor is a useful defense against the universe; it is not a trick; "it is a presence in the world—like grace—and shines on everyone."

Humor aids the cultivation of optimism and what a bonus that is! The pessimist sees the *difficulty* in every opportunity, but the optimist sees the *opportunity* in every difficulty. "Everything comes to him who hustles while he waits" (Thomas Edison).

Being Faithful in the Little Things

Little things smooth the way, qualities like humility and the readiness to make amends. "An apology is the superglue of life. It can repair just about anything." Kindness and acceptance also help. We love those who know the worst in us and don't turn their faces away. "Only your real friends will tell you when your face is dirty."

Then there's diplomacy—saying the right thing at the right time. The manager of a prestigious apartment house called down a speaking tube to the janitor. Unable to get the information he required, the manager blurted out: "Say, is there an idiot at the end of this tube?" The reply came quickly: "Not at this end, Sir." Diplomacy is the art of giving the other person a fine reputation to live up to, like telling your boss he has an open mind instead of saying he has holes in his head.

Let's be liberal with our encouragement. In teaching, make

things seem easy to do, and let the other person know you have faith in his ability to do what has to be done. “Men must be taught as though you taught them not, and things unknown proposed as things forgot.” If you want enemies, excel your friends; but if you want friends, let your friends excel you. “It is a sad peculiarity that mortal mind takes joy in the misfortunes of those it has envied,” said a Christian Science lecturer.

Above all, like the good Samaritan, show kindness to anyone in trouble, even when it is inconvenient.

The frazzled employee told his boss, “I’m sorry I’m late. My mother-in-law has been staying with us, and this morning she slipped and fell unconscious over the sink.”

“Goodness!” exclaimed the boss, “What did you do?”

“I didn’t know *what* to do at first. Finally I just shaved in the tub.”

What job is worth that sort of callousness? When we treat others as objects which benefit or inconvenience us, we lose touch with the divine Love that is our Principle. We lose sight of our goal: the realization of our oneness with infinite good.

It’s very important to have a goal, a particular destination. Mrs. Eddy writes, “The discoverer of Christian Science finds the path less difficult when she has the high goal always before her thoughts” (S&H 426:5). The Christian Scientist who keeps the goal in mind will find that what was true for Mrs. Eddy is also true for him.

Remember, *I AM WORTHY*. It is a measure of love to know how we are coming across to others. While being quick to lend a hand, let’s also be careful to mind our own business, remembering when the mouth stumbles, it’s worse than the foot. Indeed, “sometimes it’s better to keep one’s mouth shut and be thought a fool than to open it and remove all doubt.” Thus my prayer: “Lord, keep me from the habit of thinking I must say something on every subject and on every occasion. Make me thoughtful, but not moody; helpful, but not bossy. With my vast store of wisdom, it seems a pity not to use it all—but Thou knowest, Lord, that I want a few friends at the end.” Wisdom does not necessarily come with age. Sometimes age just shows

up by itself. However, by the little acts we do, by the love we cultivate, we will grow in understanding and compassion until we can truly know our oneness with divine Love, our wedding to God, divine Mind.

Home Is Where the Heart Is

The daily relationships of marriage and family life give us plenty of opportunities to practice love and forbearance. Possibly today we make marriage too complicated. Love does not consist of gazing at each other, but of looking outward together in the same direction. A psychologist explains: “Ultimately, marriage is just a relationship in which human beings try to find release and fulfillment. They don’t ask so very much. Just to come first with someone. To be needed by someone. And to hear an occasional word of appreciation from that someone. It’s not much, but it’s enough.”

Just “*BE LOVE*,” as Mrs. Eddy counseled. Whatever the pressure we’re under, we needn’t be like the farmer’s wife at the drug store: “Now be sure” she cautioned the druggist, “to label them bottles plain; which one is for the horse, and which one is for my husband. I don’t want nothin’ to happen to that horse before spring plowing.”

A Bible proverb urges: “Pleasant words are as a honeycomb, sweet to the soul and health to the bones.” Another reminds us, “A word fitly spoken is like apples of gold in pictures of silver.” Let’s not withhold words that could forever endear us to our life partner, words of love, admiration, and approval. Praise brings warmth and pleasure into the commonplace and turns the noisy rattle of the world into music. A husband or wife who is alert to saying the heartening thing at the right moment is an esteem enricher. Make a point of offering praise or encouragement at least once a day.

At this stage of our growth, marriage can be the most fruitful and treasured of all human relationships. The “experts” have an avalanche of free advice for both the married and single. Their tips (gathered from many sources) urge us to “be there” for each other. Don’t nap or snooze while your tearful wife is telling her troubles. It is not only important to be a good listener, and to say the right

thing at the right time, but to leave *unsaid* the wrong thing at the tempting moment.

Show that you care. Make the other person feel important. Hug your loved ones every day. The warmth of the human touch helps get rid of loneliness and despair.

“Because true intimacy develops slowly, give relationships time to develop.” Treat others the way you want to be treated. “Take pride in your loved ones’ successes, and avoid competing with them or comparing their accomplishments with your own.” In healing sin, no condemnation is allowed. At this state of our growth we cannot expect perfection, but we can go forward with unfailing optimism. Pessimism is an albatross that would drag us down to defeat.

Why are we so often more apt to count our troubles than to count our joys and blessings? Gratitude can be drawn from our true Mind. Herbert Eustace asked, “Of all the virtues, can there be found one more prolific of quiet, peaceful happiness, more overflowing with love and kindness, than gratitude?”

Be open and honest with those you love. Telling lies and keeping secrets can damage a relationship. If we keep on sputtering and ventilating ourselves, that won’t help either. Sharing yourself and letting others get close to you will promote true intimacy.

Don’t expect all your needs to be filled by one person—it could put too much pressure on the relationship—but never take a loved one for granted. “Change and the grave may part us; the wisdom that might have blessed the past may come too late” (*Mis.* 339:29). Don’t let it! Each day look at a person as if you were meeting him or her for the first time. “Be free with compliments.” Mark Twain once said he could live two months on a good compliment. Sincere compliments will make *your* loved ones feel good, too.

In all this advice giving, our old friend, Anon, also has some admonitions: “Keep your chin up; it will help you keep your mouth shut—when it should be.” “Do not run people down; only an elevator operator should do that.” And “only God is in a position to look down on people.” Certainly, the thousand-year-old deadly sins of anger, envy, unjustifiable pride, lust, etc., must be avoided, since they

are as treacherous as ever.

Following these strategies with those we love will “promote the sinless joy and perfect harmony” we all long for. Let’s begin now to start out from spiritual reality. As we meet each other and the world with the “onliness” of the Mind that is Love, we gain the understanding of all that Mind (our real Mind) presents. We will be able to say, as Mrs. Eddy did, “The more I understand true humanhood, the more I see it to be sinless,—as ignorant of sin as is the perfect Maker” (*Un.* 49:8).

Deep within each one is the hunger for the truth about himself. Relatives, friends, acquaintances ostensibly seeking companionship, etc., are actually longing, craving, for the truth about themselves, true substance. As we specifically entertain the truth about God and man, as we know those around us as infinite good knows them, we give them the bread of life and not a stone.

We have all been invited to Love’s table together. As we become aware that we are one with Love, we will find that this Love anointeth our heads (our intelligence) with oil, with heavenly inspiration, with consecration. Our cup runneth over. Here the optimist says, “What a blessing!” The pessimist says, “What a mess!” And the Psalmist saith: “I will dwell in the consciousness of Love forever since I am one with that consciousness, wedded to that consciousness that *is Love.*”



The Baker Homestead—Bow, New Hampshire

CHAPTER V

THE SPIRITUAL WEDDING

Mrs. Eddy's Gift to Us Sets the Seal

What a difference the reading of Science and Health and all that Mrs. Eddy has written can make in our lives and in the lives of those we love! As we “study thoroughly the letter and imbibe the spirit” (S&H 495:27) eventually we will “become conscious for a single moment that Life and intelligence are purely spiritual” (S&H 14:12). This will set forever the seal in our mind that “the kingdom of God is within” our consciousness.

A single moment is all it takes. When the Wright brothers kept their plane aloft “for a single moment” they set the seal on air transportation for all time. When the first automobile ran a few feet, it set the seal for all time on automotive transportation, ending the era of horses and carriages. A December, 1995, *Wall Street Journal* article said, “German scientists created the first atoms of antimatter for 40 billionths of a second in September [1995] in Switzerland. The researchers, dismissing science-fiction portrayals of antimatter as an energy source, said their findings could lead to a new understanding of the universe’s nature.” Let’s hope it sets the seal for all time on what Mary Baker Eddy discerned as the true nature of the universe.

All of these advances were the result of dedicated effort. We don’t just stumble into Truth. Truth has to be learned through study and *PRACTICE*. Yes, to reveal and gain heaven right here on earth, the textbook that reveals Truth needs to be *studied*. As we study we find “all that the Father [Mind, my own real Mind] hath is mine.” This means all *qualities* of Mind, Spirit, Soul, Principle, Life, Truth, and Love are mine. I have only to claim them.

Our constant prayer should be for a greater spiritual discernment of what we already *are*. We must *CLAIM* our Christ-expressing selfhood. As we study the “little book” in the hand of the angel, and as we practice the God-qualities, we will reach that moment of understanding in which the seal is set and we know ourselves forever wedded to God. Looking out from the Truth, we will find “the full representation of Mind,” the reality of existence. We should daily express gratitude to our Leader who brought this Second Coming of the Christ that is destined to establish heaven on earth.

The Love Mary Baker Eddy Manifested

Nothing but joy, and an uplift that nearly takes one out of the flesh, should follow a defense of our God-sent Leader. Edward Kimball, Sybil Wilbur, Elizabeth Earl Jones, Abigail Dwyer Thompson, Nemi Robertson and many of Mrs. Eddy’s other students have spoken of the love, the joy, the heavenly spiritual rise and inspiration they felt in Mrs. Eddy’s presence, and how for days after talking with her, they seemed to walk on air.

Daisette McKenzie said in summary: “Mrs. Eddy had that rare gift of losing herself in ministrations to another. With whomsoever she was conversing, that one was the whole world to her. It was as though she and the visitor were alone with God, and her whole attention and love was given for the moment to only one consciousness. This was not a studied attitude, but the result of her deep interest in each human being, and it had a wonderful effect of calling out the very best that each individual held in his heart.” Mrs. Eddy knew: “He’s an heir of heaven who finds his bosom glow with love.”

Many have testified that until they came in contact with Mrs. Eddy they did not know there was such love. Students left records, such as: “There are simply no words to describe the glorious spiritual uplift, power, and blessing of working with our beloved Leader.” In her they were conscious of a love so overwhelming, so uplifting, and so divine that all resistance from false theology or materia medica simply evaporated before it.

Mrs. Eddy's loyal students had total admiration for her moral courage. They knew that no other, save Christ Jesus, had dared to urge a step so high.

How high?

A step that brings us into oneness with God—a step that weds us to infinite good. Mrs. Eddy has shown us how to remove the materiality from our shoes as we walk on hallowed ground, and how to persevere in the face of adversity. She lifted thought far above personal joys, lifted it to the realm of the real where all the “sons of God,” in unity, shout for joy!

The Testing Time

The Second Coming of the Christ came through Mary Baker Eddy because she was the one person on earth prepared to receive it.

All her life Mrs. Eddy had sought a better understanding of God. She had endured unbearable suffering, pain, sorrow, and rejection, until, through her trust and confidence in infinite good, she overcame all the carnal mind's cruel attempts to change or divert her. She knew, as the poet said, “The soul would have no rainbow had the eyes no tears.” Therefore she prayed, “Oh, make me glad for every scalding tear, for hope deferred, ingratitude, disdain.” “Mortal throes of anguish forward the birth of immortal being; but divine Science wipes away all tears” (*Un.* 57:25).

While Mrs. Eddy was writing *Science and Health* she was forced to move eight times. Once while she was living with the Websters, their son, a strong spiritualist, came home. Obsessed with hatred against Mrs. Eddy, he put her out of the house on a cold winter night. As she sat on her trunk—a raw biting wind whipping about her—she began to write what later became the scientific statement of being.

The first seventeen years after her great discovery were a saga of hardships, poverty, and humiliation. Her dentist husband, Dr. Pater-son, eloped with one of his patients. Children mimicked her. Her family were ashamed of her and shut her out of their homes and out of their hearts. For the first sixteen years, not one student remained

loyal. She even sometimes went hungry.

“Many students fell away through the years when her purity became too high and too strong for them. Many there were who were willing to be Christian Scientists on a comfortable material level; but the higher atmosphere of their Leader made them uncomfortable, for it exposed their own shortcomings.

“Our Leader’s busy life was a rebuke to mental laziness. Her persistent activity and her rising above material demands and restrictions, were a rebuke to indifference and apathy. Her denial of the senses was a rebuke to sensuality. [Part II will go more deeply into why her teaching offended the materially minded]. On page 53 of *Science and Health* we read, ‘The world could not interpret aright the discomfort which Jesus inspired and the spiritual blessings which might flow from such discomfort.’” (Carpenter item)

Through it all she strove mightily to demonstrate what had been revealed to her; she waited, and loved more for every hate; she feared “no ill, since God is good and loss is gain.” Like Jacob at Peniel, with yet many a weary mile to trudge, she always felt she could say: “I have seen God face to face, and my life is preserved.” She had caught “the lost chord of Truth”—healing as of old. She caught it consciously from Divine Harmony, as a revelation of Truth.

Mrs. Eddy regarded painful experiences as a testing time to determine how strong her confidence really was in the infinite good we call God. She knew “there is no redundant drop in the cup our Father permits us” (02. 19:29). “Through great tribulation we enter the kingdom,” says Scripture. “In the world ye shall have tribulation, but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world,” said Jesus (John 16:33).

We cannot truly know how strong our confidence in Spirit is until we have been tried—tried by having human and material foundations swept away. In the spiritual growth of everyone, there is a testing time. If we don’t prove that we can live in peace and joy in spite of any circumstance, we are not playing with a full deck of cards, and we will be forced to endure continuous harsh experiences until we do learn to be happy no matter what mortal mind is dishing up for us.

After a bitter experience, such as in the “Next Friends” suit,

Mrs. Eddy could say, “When these things cease to bless they will cease to occur” (*My*. 143:23). When we can maintain a life of peace and joy, in spite of all material lack, and have learned to live by the Spirit, then we can say with St. Paul, “I have learned both how to abound, and how to suffer lack.” (See *Phil.* 4:12.)

Let us remember St. Paul’s admonition to “rejoice in tribulation.” There is no way of escaping a testing time. It is essential for our spiritual growth that we endure this testing until we have learned our lesson and awakened to know our oneness with the infinite good we call God.

“God Is My Individuality and My Life”

Mrs. Eddy confides: “[God] sustains my individuality. Nay, more—He *IS* my individuality and my Life. Because He lives, I live” (*Un.* 48:7). “Man has an immortal Soul, a divine Principle, and an eternal being. Man has perpetual individuality; and God’s laws, and their intelligent and harmonious action, constitute his individuality in the Science of Soul” (*No.* 11:3). Do we think we were born into matter, that we have a material body and a mind apart from the one divine Mind? This is animal magnetism barreling down on us. Jesus tells us there is no truth in this belief; it is a “murderer from the beginning.”

“Man” does not have a body; he *is body*, the embodiment of Principle’s ideas. When you gain the right sense of body or man, you are the Son of God—you have “*made [yourself]* the Son of God.” Perfect rightness, in thought, word, and deed, is the real man or body. Your perfect body, Mrs. Eddy taught, was never born; it has always existed and will always exist. It is both male and female in Spirit, for it manifests the divine completeness of your true divine Mind, called Father-Mother God.

Body, she taught, is the manifestation of vigor, vitality, energy, strength, power, force, and perfect impulsion. Mrs. Eddy said, “Do not hesitate to leave the belief of a personal patient out of your treatment. A treatment has nothing to do with the mortal self” (Carpenter item). Our treatment is simply the utterance of spiritual truth. It is the truth

about God, Life, man, body, substance, presence, power, law, action. It is a calm, quiet, peaceful announcement that error is unreal and without substance, law, power, or presence. “And when thought is lost in the eminence of Mind,” she said, “the healing takes place. *THE HUMAN BODY IS AN ERROR OF BELIEF.*” *DCC*, p. 237 As matter, its birth, growth, maturity and death are all illusion. Right where this matter body seems to be, is the spiritual body. It has always and forever existed and will forever exist.

Your spiritual body identifies or gives evidence of your Mind—the evidence that there is God. When we improve the mind we improve the body. We must see that our statements of Truth ARE our body.

The hour has struck for us to arouse ourselves out of the Adam dream and awaken to our sense of divine WHOLENESS just as the prodigal son awoke and saw he was one with the Father, divine Love.

The word body means being. Body means that which Mind is consciously being. God, your own real Mind, knows itself by means of Its body or manifestation. What appears as human or material creation is actually the divine spiritual creation at hand, but not perfectly known because it is viewed through the lens of false material sense, seen “through a glass darkly.” (See S&H 503:1).

Right where the material body seems to be is the spiritual body. Our present body is embraced in our Mind. Our present body is either the phenomenon of right ideas or of false beliefs. “Material sense defines all things materially, and has a finite sense of the infinite” (S&H 298:2). Divinity appearing as humanity, as true humanhood, is the “Word made flesh.” We must be awake to not mentally separate between our divinity and our humanity. The healer beholds the perfect man and knows that the man who asks for help with a disease, is that perfect man no matter how distorted the patient seems to be. To the healer there is only perfection present here and now.

Paganism and false theology have educated us to believe that the so-called human body is material. Mrs. Eddy teaches that when we understand the eternal relation of the oneness of Mind

and body we shall overcome sin, sickness, death. Our body or embodiment is but the garment of our thought. The body always visibly manifests the mind from which it is evolved. This is why whenever our body shows us an image of inharmony we must immediately replace this false image with what God, our right Mind, knows. We must strive to understand the omnipresence of present perfection here and now.

Anything that really exists can't be matter; "matter is mortal error." Understanding this, Jesus healed the withered hand by seeing it whole. We all must learn never to separate our present spiritual and real body from its divine source. Mortal belief "feels, hears, and sees its own thoughts" (S&H 86:30). When our so-called mind is disturbed, dissatisfied, these mental conditions are expressed outwardly as physical or bodily conditions. The more we can keep our thought on the fact that everything in infinity is eternally perfect in Being, and in manifestation, the more we will spiritualize our thought, and so overcome every physical limitation, even age and death. Like Jesus and Mrs. Eddy we will begin to see and demonstrate "the nothingness of material life and intelligence and the mighty actuality of all-inclusive God, good." (S&H 52:19).

Progress dispels the BELIEF "that mortal mind's sensations can reproduce man, can form flesh, blood and bones" and that the body we now have is material, organic, structural. As we clear away our beliefs to our sense and sight there will appear our ever-present glorious body—the body that was seen on the Mount of Transfiguration.

It is Truth that brings the belief to light; the human mind cannot uncover its own error. Sickness and death evidence the nothingness of matter. They are the self-destruction of mortal mind going on as the law of Spirit, infinite good. Matter must be translated into its original language, Mind. We must look away from error, and look to the ever-present Truth. Rejoice in the divine fact that there is nothing that needs to be healed. The constant demand is to acknowledge infinite good; constantly bear witness to the divine law—to be what you divinely are.

Our *knowing the truth* is the operating of the Truth. We must *be Christ* in this respect, for we are God's operator in our own behalf. Dwelling on what is true, we become a law to ourselves. Our treatment is Christ; it is the utterance of the law of God to the case. Error claims to act as law, but error is a lie.

"The operation of Truth is going on for us *WHEN WE OPERATE IT, AND NEVER AT ANY OTHER TIME*," she said. "The father of all lies is the belief that life is in matter, but our persistent declaration of Truth acts as a ray of sunshine dispersing the darkness of this error.

"There is no material, personal patient; there is only false belief to destroy. It is not the patient's belief, or your belief, or anyone's belief. It does not exist; nobody has it. It belongs only to animal magnetism" (A Carpenter Item).

Mary Baker Eddy on "Body"

Many years ago, while visiting the Congressional Library in Washington, D.C., I read "the copyrighted statement by Mrs. Mary Baker G. Eddy, January 19th, 1886." Being a young student at that time I got very little out of it, but reading a copy of it again today, I find the glorious truth it sets forth opens up a whole new world. Here is the article on "Body" in its entirety:

"The term Mind and body literally means God ["God is individual Mind," your Mind (*Mis.* 101:31)] and man [your Mind's reflection, image], for man is the embodiment of Mind. Therefore man is God's body and there is but one God. Body is therefore the aggregation of spiritual ideas, forever controlled and governed by the law of Life, harmonious and eternal. This understanding of perfect body is the savior of the belief of body and is the law of recovery to any and every claim of error.

"It seemed a wonderful thing when advanced thinkers began to perceive certain mental laws and to apply them to the healing of the body. This mental teaching is that man is the builder or creator of his body, that he builds or forms his body by his thought, and therefore

that, if he has built a sick body by wrong or ignorant thinking, he can build a well body by right thinking, that by his ignorant inharmonious thought he prevents God from manifesting, and by his true and harmonious thought he brings God into manifestation.

“Of course, this is a great advance over the old drug system, but it does not go far enough to satisfy the one who wishes the whole truth and nothing but the truth. It makes the body a battle ground for opposing and contending forces, wrong thinking tearing down, right thinking building up; wrong thinking creating disease, right thinking destroying disease and bringing in healthy conditions, for this teaching deals only with the changing conditions of the personal mentality and not with the changeless states of being, the changeless Mind, the omnipresence. It is better than the old way but it is a hard way, a way of constant battle between good and evil, of hard work and doubtful result, because it deals with two powers instead of one.

“Practically all metaphysical teachers agree that there is one presence, therefore one power, but they balk at the next step, which is that one power must mean one activity. Omnipresence means the full measure of God as all, that God is everywhere, all the time. It means that God and his activity is all there is, not only of the invisible, but of the visible, not only the formless, but the formed. Therefore it must follow that the formed is as perfect as the formless, the manifest is as perfect as the unmanifest; for since there is but one unchanging creator, one activity, one power, one perfect Mind bringing forth its own perfect substance, it logically follows that all form is changeless and eternally perfect.

“Paul tells us, not that we are sufficient of ourselves to think anything as of ourselves, but our sufficiency is of God. Our sufficiency to think is of God [our own true Mind]; our ability to form beliefs and opinion is of our own ignorance, our belief in duality, but our power or sufficiency to think is when we think with God, as God. From this basis then, we see that man’s wrong or ignorant beliefs and opinions and misinterpretations do not create or produce conditions in the body or in God’s substance anywhere. Wrong thinking, which is really mental chaos and confusion itself, has no

power to create. It does not create conditions of disease. The wrong thinking itself, the mental confusion and chaos itself is the condition, for the condition is wholly and entirely of the personal [animal magnetism] mentality.

“There is no condition in substance, for substance is God. A condition is not a tangible something which has been created in the body by a belief of evil or an ignorant attitude. The definition given in the College Normal Class is this: A condition is that conception of Truth which is limited and temporal. It is not something which the limited conception has created, but the limited conception itself. It has no place anywhere but in the realm of chaos and confusion, the place of opinions and conclusions, based on a false premise. That there is a condition, is all the condition there is.

“The inharmonious belief does not create an inharmonious condition. The belief of lack is the lack. The belief of disease is the disease. That is why the body seems to change as man’s thinking changes. It is simply as beliefs of disease and imperfections fall away, and our thinking is corrected and held true to Truth, so mental chaos and confusion no longer cloud our vision, that we see the body as God sees it, as it eternally is. Then it stands revealed to us in its beauty and its glory, the temple not made with hands. All that our ignorance does is to affect our vision, our view of things. It does not change anything that God [our own real Mind] has made.

“We do not handle substance through our personal thought to change it. We only see according to our thought, our degree of enlightenment. Walt Whitman said, ‘the world is jagged and broken to him who is jagged and broken,’ to him whose mental realm is dark. If one’s thought is ignorant and unenlightened, it changes his vision as a cloud of mist. As he looks through the cloud he sees this world, the body, all things, distorted, abnormal and wrong.

“If the mental atmosphere is dark and dense, we see but dimly and are not able to perceive the perfection that is. Man does not by effort bring God into manifestation. Neither does he through wrong thinking prevent God’s manifestation. God *IS*, and God is manifest, and it is not in the power of unenlightened personal thought or men-

tal effort to obstruct or hinder the activity of God, or to mar or to deface the perfection of God's creation.

“The only thing that depends upon my thinking, the only thing that is affected by it, the only thing that responds to it, is my vision, my realization. I may be ignorant of the truth of the body, but that does not alter the body itself. It is whole and perfect now, not because I think it is, but because it is God [your real, true Mind] manifest. Thinking with God, as God, shows me the perfection of the body, but the body is just as perfect before I knew it as after. God's substance does not cease to be perfect just because I am ignorant of its perfection nor does it become perfect because I find out the Truth. Its wholeness does not depend upon my degree of enlightenment. It is eternally perfect because it is eternally just what God is and there is no power anywhere to make it anything else. If we are looking at it through a mental fog, opinions, doubts, fears, confusion, we shall not perceive its perfection, but that does not change the body itself any more than looking at the sun through a fog changes the sun.

“All the thought that the earth was flat, did not flatten the earth, did it? It just went right on being what it was, and the only thing that changed, or could change, was man's thought about it. Of course, until he reached that place, he lived as if his ignorance was the truth.

“We hear a lot about spiritualizing the body through thought. This teaching regards body as physical or material and undertakes to change matter into Spirit through mental effort. Divine Science, from the basis of omnipresence, teaches that, since there is but one substance and that substance is Spirit, there is no material body. The body is Spirit now. [Remember this is what Mrs. Eddy tried to teach Adam Dickey.] ‘Except the Lord build the house, they labour in vain that build it.’ Just so long as you are trying to spiritualize the body, or to heal the body through your own effort, just so long as you are trying to create health, you are laboring in vain, for you are trying to do God's part, to do that which has already been done.

“We live in a universe of perfect form. Not only our body, but all that is formed is literally the body of God [your own real,

true Mind] and is perfect now. To believe that the infinite substance has been malformed through the ignorant mental activity of the individual, and must be redeemed and perfected through the same activity, is to see not one power, but two. There is no condition in the body. There is nothing in the body to be rebuilt or straightened or healed. There is nothing to change. There is nothing needed but to see God. Stand ye still and see the salvation of the Lord. Your spoken word is not needed to make wholeness manifest, for the wholeness is the eternal state of the unseen and the seen, the unformed and formed; but it is needed for your unfoldment, for the unfolding and broadening and deepening of the individual until he realizes this perfection. Stop trying to think God into manifestation. God is manifest now. God's glory and perfection are everywhere visible to him that hath eyes to see.

“All we need to do—and it will keep us busy—is to train our thought faithfully and persistently in the acknowledgment of the truth of God's presence, train it to judge righteous judgment, to see God and God only, to think God, and God only. Having accepted the omnipresence, hold to it no matter what the apparent condition may seem to be. In treating yourself, never deal with appearances or symptoms. Do not center your thought upon organs or functions. Infinite substance, power, intelligence, and activity are in that place and do not need your suggestions. Do not try to formulate in thought the perfect body. Stop thinking about the body or trying to picture it as perfect from your standpoint. Our highest perception of the body is far short of what the body really is. Stop tinkering with it mentally. Loose it and let it go. Just know that it is God's body and that God is this moment and every moment forming it or bringing it forth according to His Word, His divine idea. Jesus recognized Lazarus as an undying manifestation of God.” (End of article on body.)

The True Sense of Being

Man is the activity of the divine Principle that you are. In the coincidence of the human and the divine, the human fades out. Mrs.

Eddy's willingness to let the human sense of existence yield to the divine enabled her to fulfill the scriptural prophecy concerning her. Only by allowing God to be her origin and inspiration could she carry out her God-ordained mission to bring the Second Coming of the Christ, the "Comforter," that would lead humanity to see its divinity.

"Every human thought must *turn* instinctively to the divine Mind as its sole centre and intelligence" (*Mis.* 307:30). Practicing this, she showed us that when thought turns to the divine, it gives up the human. Her relative statements are stepping stones to her absolute statements, and her absolute statements refer to you, as when she says: "You are Spirit"; "You are Soul"; "You are Principle"; "[You] will be Life, Truth, and Love when [you] understand them."

It is extremely important when studying Mary Baker Eddy's writings that we distinguish between her absolute statements—statements that express the spiritual *FACT*—and her relative statements concerning our false *BELIEFS*. When she writes: "There is no sin, no sickness, no death; "God is ALL," that is a true and absolute statement. But because humanity tenaciously clings to the material, the false, lying evidence of the five physical senses, we find in the textbook the many relative statements that refer to the material sense of things, such as: "Sickness, sin, death, must be destroyed."

Every time we believe what the lying material senses tell us we are having "gods many," and breaking the commandment: "Thou shalt have no other gods before me." Every time we believe in something that isn't in line with the omnipresence of present perfection, we are having "gods many" and again breaking that great commandment, "Thou shalt have no other gods before me."

When we see how logical, how incontrovertible Mrs. Eddy's wonderful teaching is, shouldn't we be astonished that the world has resisted it, and is even today slow in accepting it? All the suffering in the world is the outcome of believing the lying evidence of the five physical senses, having "gods many" and failing to obey the commandment: "Thou shalt have no other gods before me."

In reading such relative statements as: "Sin kills the sinner and will continue to kill him so long as he sins," and "Evil has to be

mastered and destroyed," keep in mind the absolute statement in Christian Science that in reality there is no evil; it is only our belief in it that has to be destroyed. If we really believed that God, infinite good, is ALL, we would become aware that evil, being nothing, does not exist even as a claim. Mary Baker Eddy's teachings destroy the human delusions that we lack wholeness, that we are not one with the grand realities of infinite good—the infinite good that in reality is our own right Mind.

Man or body is the embodiment of Principle's ideas. Every time "Principle" is mentioned, know that *you* are Principle—your right Mind is Principle. Declare it. It is the Truth. Only the Adam dream, hypnotism, aggressive mental suggestion, the lie about you, tells you that you are not Principle, that your real Mind is not God, infinite good.

Mrs. Eddy wrote Adam Dickey "the so-called human mind is expected to increase in wisdom until it disappears and divine Mind is seen to be the only Mind."

Remember that the
 so-called human
 mind is expected to in-
 crease in wisdom
 until it disappears
 CHESTNUT HILL, MASS. December 13, 1909.
 and Divine Mind
 is seen to be the
 only Mind

In these few words we find an explanation for Mrs. Eddy's demand to the Directors to "do nothing in statuary, in writing, or in action to perpetuate or immortalize the thought of personal being; but do and illustrate, teach and practice all that will impersonalize God [your real Mind] and His idea.... "Hell," Mrs. Eddy said, "may

be defined as stopping with the symbol, resting contentedly in shadows, believing them to be substantial; whereas heaven is looking through the symbol to God, the source of All, and finding all satisfaction in God [your real divine Mind].

When Mrs. Eddy spoke in The Mother Church for the first time, she said to a student afterwards, "I looked over that entire audience, and did not see a single Christian Scientist." Perhaps she was trying to convey to us the lesson, that she did not see one student in the audience who was looking through her [the symbol] to see God. They were all looking at her as a person, satisfied to let thought rest on the symbol.

True Science of Being

The divine Mind (your real Mind) manifests itself infinitely, and this is the only Mind there is. Regarding this Mind, your real Mind, Isaiah 45:15 says: "I am the Lord, and there is none else." Hosea (11:9) declares pointedly: "I am God and not man." Jesus insisted he was the Life and the Truth. Life and Truth are synonyms for God. "Mortals must look beyond fading, finite forms, if they would gain the true sense of being." You embrace your body in your thought. What we see when we look about us is not matter, but identity.

Regarding identity in the human, it seemed fitting that in 1877 Mary Baker Glover had her name changed to Eddy.

"In the first edition of his dictionary Webster writes about the noun, *eddy*, 'I find this word in no other language. It is usually considered as the compound of the Saxon, *ed*, backward, and *ea*, water. It means a current of water running back, or in a direction contrary to the main stream.'

"According to the Anglo-Saxon dictionary *ed* as a prefix denotes *anew, again*. As a noun it means *safety, security, happiness, a renewing, restoration, regeneration*. Therefore it seems fitting that in 1877 the Discoverer and Founder of Christian Science should have had her name changed to Eddy, since at that time, she was beginning the great spiritual demonstration of founding the organiza-

tion which was to perpetuate her discovery of a decade ago, and also because the name has a deep spiritual significance and symbolism [as already stated]." The substance of this was sent to Mrs. Eddy by Mrs. Gilbert Carpenter.

Answering the question, "What are body and Soul?" Mrs. Eddy writes: "Identity is the reflection of Spirit, the reflection in multifarious forms of the living Principle, Love" (S&H 477:19). She characterizes Soul as unconfined, changeless *identity*, as balance, bliss, beauty, joy, spiritual understanding, spiritual sense, etc. These, together with all the ideas that characterize "Mind, Spirit, Soul, Principle, Life, Truth, and Love"—Mrs. Eddy's definition for God—are the body "you embrace in your thought."

Each idea has its own identity. Speaking of Michael in the Old Testament, Mrs. Eddy tells us that his "characteristic is spiritual strength. He leads the hosts of heaven against the power of sin, Satan, and fights the holy wars [just what we must do constantly, since error is so aggressive]. Gabriel has the more quiet task of imparting a sense of the ever-presence of ministering Love [seeing that error is nothing, and understanding that man—because he reflects the Mind that is Love—is the fullness of Love]" (S&H 566:30).

Our divine self-completeness, as the being of Love, includes body, meaning every idea of God, infinite good. In *The Science of Man*, Mrs. Eddy wrote, "We say Christ came to save sinners, and Christ is God, ever-present and omnipotent, then there is no other power or presence, and Christ is never absent. Jesus was the idea of God, and God the Life and Intelligence of this idea; Jesus was the man, and Christ (God) the Principle of the man Jesus....But to reach this Principle and to prove it, Science was requisite; the understanding of God could only be reached through demonstration, making what Jesus *DID*, of higher importance than what he said."

Jesus and Mary Baker Eddy show us the unreality of error. They teach us how to overcome the Adam dream by replacing the nothingness of error with the truth of being. Our business, then, is to know that, being Mind, Spirit, Soul, Principle, Life, Truth, and Love—which the first edition of *Science and Health* tells us we are—we can

only bring forth right, true, divine ideas.

Importance of Seeing No Birth into Matter

It is hard for mortals to see there was no birth—that birth into matter beliefs is an illusion. As long ago as 550 B.C., Pythagoras and the Pythagorean brotherhood taught and practiced celibacy. They “sought by rites and abstinences to purify the believer’s soul and enable it to escape the wheel of birth” (Encyclopedia Br.). The more recent fires set under the false belief that sex is the creator has been almost totally ignored by Christians as well as Christian Scientists.

Until Mrs. Eddy revealed the non-existence of matter, it seemed we stumbled into human birth without a strategy for ending it. Why is it important to know there is no birth into matter? Because *death begins at birth*. Both death and birth are belief only; and when we buy into one we necessarily buy into the other. Therefore our work is to know that material birth is an illusion, since “All is infinite Mind and its infinite manifestation.” Therefore, taught both Jesus and Mrs. Eddy, it's time to stop “the ghastly farce” of human birth—birth into matter. Mind, your divine Mind, is immortal—“never born and never dying.” It doesn’t die, just as a mathematical truth doesn’t die. Nothing can kill $2 \times 2 = 4$; and nothing can kill your identity, your spiritual body, the idea of Mind.

Our work is to “Seek first the kingdom of God and His righteousness, [then] all these things shall be added unto you.” The *secret* of all true achievement is the realization of infinite good’s ever-presence here and now. But material belief and “human capacity are slow to grasp [infinite good’s] creation and the divine power and presence which go with it, demonstrating its spiritual origin” (S&H 519:11).

We’re even slower than the old shoe repair shop. A man found a six-year-old shoe repair ticket in the pocket of an old suit, and called to see if the shoes were still around.

“Were they black wingtips needing half soles?” asked the clerk.

“Yes,” said the man.

“We’ll have them ready in a week.”

Slow as we may be, we need never despair. “Tireless Being,” Mrs. Eddy writes (*Hea.* 19:18), “patient of man’s procrastination, affords him fresh opportunities every hour....”

Ode to Divine Supply

When Mrs. Eddy wrote, “Divine Love always has met and always will meet every human need,” she knew we must become aware that our consciousness is the divine Love. Divine Love is our own real Mind, and this Mind that is Love lacks nothing.

Long ago, just after finishing six years at the University of Washington and owing everyone money, my husband, Bill, and I were living in Yakima, Washington. I needed a suitcase as I had been accepted for Class Instruction in a distant state, and on this particular hot summer day I had seen a suitcase in a downtown store window—a suitcase that I deeply desired.

As I trudged wearily the three miles toward home, I kept staunchly declaring that God would provide; “Son thou art ever with me and all that I have is thine.” Half way home I stopped at Nelly McLaughlin’s farm, a small spread where each of Nelly’s children had numerous pets. After joyful greetings and a bit of small conversation, Nelly pointed to one of her dogs, Spot, and said, “Helen, she’d make you a good watch dog.”

I happened to know that Spot was in deep trouble for having bitten the mailman, and other offenses, but mostly for being pregnant with at least six offspring. Feeling sorry for Spot, I said yes; and together we marched the last mile and a half at a spritely gait to where Bill and I were living—my love for Spot increasing with every step.

A week later, coming home at 9:30 p.m. from a visit to the Yakima Fair, Bill and I found Spot under the kitchen table with six puppies trying to nurse. As we watched we were saddened to see that Spot continually pushed the smallest one away. The little one’s eyes mirrored hunger, and also the pain of being rejected.

When it became obvious that the little one would starve to death, my dear Bill said, “Maybe I should put it out of its misery.” Tenderly picking up the forlorn creature, he made for the woodshed. Within minutes he was back, hugging the puppy he had named “Tiny Tim.” Almost in tears he said, “I can’t do it.”

Finding the drug store still open he got a bottle with a nipple; filled it with warm milk, and set the alarm for an every four-hour feeding. Dear *blessed* Bill repeated this procedure many nights—I feeding Tiny Tim during the day.

Finally came the day when the puppies were weaned. I took them to the Yakima Feed & Grain store. The kindly manager agreed to find homes for them. I told him about Tiny Tim. Ten days later when I looked in, he had sold them all, and *GAVE ME THE EXACT AMOUNT OF MONEY I NEEDED TO BUY THE COVETED SUITCASE* I had seen in the store window, two months earlier, the day I stopped at Spot’s old home.

The Feed and Grain store manager told me Tiny Tim was the first to go. A cattleman from Arizona who was passing through Yakima wanted Tiny Tim when he heard his story—how he had almost been sacrificed. He said, “I’ll rename him. I’ll call him ‘Isaac.’” He was obviously a Bible student, and familiar with Isaac’s narrow escape when Abraham (thinking he was obeying God) was about to sacrifice Isaac on the top of Mt. Moriah, as told in Genesis 22:1-12. Thus ended the saga of Tiny Tim alias Isaac. He found a good Christian home and hopefully lived happily ever after, and I learned a lesson in divine supply.

Jesus counseled, “Be not anxious, saying, What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? or, Wherewithal shall we be clothed? For [infinite good] knoweth that ye have need of these things. But seek ye first the kingdom of God and His righteousness and all these things shall be added unto you.”

“Blessed are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness [the right way of thinking—knowing we are Principle, Love], for they shall be filled [not only spiritually, but also materially, with the supply of their material needs.]” In reality, it is literally true that the

“divine Love [that we are] always has met and always will meet every human need.” Through practice, through making a habit of always turning to divine Love for an answer, Jesus and Mrs. Eddy assure us we will actually become the divine Love that always has met and always will meet every human need.

The Divine System Must Be Learned

The seeker, desiring the solution to a problem, has something to do. He has to learn to *be* this divine Love. He has to become aware of what he *ALREADY IS* as Mind, Spirit, Soul, Principle, Life, Truth, and Love. When confronted with a mathematical problem, we do not say, “I will trust the principle of mathematics to work out this problem.” Instead, we work to understand mathematics until our *understanding* of mathematics works out the problem. It is the same with this divine Science. Studying the letter and practicing the spirit we will advance in understanding until we find that the system of divine Science, laid out perfectly in the pages of Science and Health, is there to help us learn to work out every so-called problem.

Mrs. Eddy says: “Divine metaphysics is now reduced to a *system*” (S&H 146:31). She speaks of her discovery of the “*system*” (viii:27), and of it being “fully tested,” (viii:1). On page 111:30 she speaks of her “metaphysical *system* of treating disease” and on page 123:17, “of the scientific *system* of divine healing.”

“Our *system*,” she tells us, “rests on the divine Mind and Love’s essential qualities” (S&H 460:5). This *system* has seven synonyms for God, namely, Mind, Spirit, Soul, Principle, Life, Truth, and Love, which operate through the Word, Christ, Christianity, and Science. What constitutes these *seven* must be learned. The seven must become our mentality. This reminds me of two women visiting Japan, who after an exhausting day, tired and thirsty, asked at the front desk of their hotel to have two 7UPs sent to their room. The drinks never came, but early the next morning the desk clerk phoned: “Morning call, *SEVEN UP!*” Yes, “seven up!” Making what the seven synonyms for God stand for, our mentality, will “open the seven seals of error with Truth” (S&H 572:15).

Judge Hanna (circa 1886) began to glimpse the system that is hidden in Science and Health, and wrote to Mrs. Eddy concerning it. She wrote back: "I have erased your verities because they are spoken *TOO SOON*; wait for growth. The textbooks [S&H and the Bible] contain it all, but so arranged as to require growth before it is spoken by those who have not grown to it. *The letter killeth*. It is the Spirit, understanding behind the words, which maketh alive" (*D.C.C.* page 184). She cautioned against "hastily pushing to the front" our declarations "about sin and Deity" while "the platoons of Christian Science are not yet thoroughly drilled in the plainer armament. 'Wait patiently on the Lord;' and in less than another fifty years His name will be magnified in the apprehension of this new subject" (*Un.* 6:25).

It was just fifty years after Mrs. Eddy wrote this, that Mr. John W. Doorly began teaching the "system" he had seen in Science and Health and the Bible. It was also just fifty years after her statement that the Christian Science periodicals published the "Six Points" regarding "*MRS. EDDY'S PLACE*" as fulfilling scriptural prophecy in bringing forth the Second Coming of the Christ.

The Second Coming of the Christ is teaching us to *understand* our oneness with infinite good, and this *understanding* is enabling us to solve all human problems with the understanding of our God-being, our oneness with infinite good, our wedding with divine Principle, Love.

The Wedded Manhood and Womanhood of God

The great gift Mrs. Eddy has given us is the Bible embraced in Science and Health, as was foretold in the Scriptural statement, "A woman shall compass a man" (Jer. 31:22). As Truth is assimilated and becomes our divinely scientific consciousness, it becomes Mrs. Eddy's successor and reveals our marriage to God. In this divine union we are found to be "Mind, Spirit, Soul, Principle, Life, Truth, and Love," infinitely expressing and manifesting itself.

Mrs. Eddy makes it clear that what will reveal her successor will be "man in the image and likeness of the Father-Mother God,

man the generic term for mankind.” “The manhood and womanhood of God,” she states, “have already been revealed *in a degree* through Christ Jesus and Christian Science, His two witnesses.” (See *My*. 346:29-5). As long as the manhood and womanhood are *TWO* they cannot be Mrs. Eddy’s successor. It is only when they become “*the divinely united consciousness* [in which] there is no impediment to eternal bliss” (S&H 577:9) that her successor is revealed. Understanding alone enables us to be her successor. As we study and practice the God qualities we bring together the manhood, Truth, and the womanhood, Love, and by this wedding we make ourself the Son of God—one with infinite good—and her successor is revealed. Her successor is the compounded spiritual, scientific individuality that reflects God (our real Mind) as Father-Mother (One). This One is your own Mind, the divine Principle, “the kingdom of God within you.”

The learning and the demonstrating of becoming one with what we already are calls for patience, persistence, perseverance, and the *PRACTICING* of the Christ *qualities*. These God-qualities are needed to open our eyes—eyes which have been veiled with the belief of life in matter. We read, “God is no respecter of persons.” Why is this? Because the only thing God, infinite good, can use is *QUALITIES*, the Christ qualities. It can’t use persons. We need faith, trust, calmness, and steadfastness—qualities which are born of God. They inform us of our present perfection, to which we must awaken. And we do awaken through the understanding that we gain from Mary Baker Eddy’s writings in the Second Coming of the Christ, where we learn not to be hypnotized by appearances, but to let our spiritual faculties bear witness to the Truth.

The World Clamors for a Change of Consciousness

The world is clamoring for a change of consciousness. The Science of Christian Science shows us how to go forward, how to make new discoveries, get new revelations. Because of our Leader’s work on earth, it can no longer be said, “My people perish for lack of knowledge.” We have learned, when the storms of error rage about

us, to tell Satan, “Get thee behind me”; and to stoutly declare the Truth, holding more tightly than ever to the truth about ourselves. With dear St. Paul we can counsel ourselves, “...be not weary in well doing, for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not” (Gal. 6:9). Our textbook shows us how to be spiritually creative and bring forth constantly new divine inspiration. Since the subjective sight of our true Mind is spiritual, then the objective must be spiritual too.

On the mortal plane, whatever we see in others is just the objective state of our own mind. If we *really believed* that God, infinite good, is All-in-all, and that God is our own Mind, we would see only spiritual man, the Christ man. The revelations of infinite good go on forever, but Christian Science and the senses are at war. Animal magnetism, error, tries—as it constantly assaults us with its woes, its sin, sickness, death—to prevent us from recognizing error as unreal. It tries hard to keep us from denouncing and contradicting error’s claims.

The great struggle today is to wake up from the Adam dream, the hypnotism, the illusion, the mistake that makes us believe we are mortals, born of the flesh, when all the while, in reality, we are God in action; we are God, infinite good, in disguise. As we dauntlessly seek first the kingdom of God, we are lifted above this struggle, and we see the spiritual idea in place of a matter belief.

We must learn to depend more on the promises of God, since God has already given us every good thing, all that it is possible to give, just as the science of mathematics has given the mathematician everything. As with the mathematician, our only work is to *understand* our Science and follow its laws.

If Jesus had not clung to the fact that evil is unreal he could not have said, “Father forgive them, for they know not what they do,” which led to his accomplishing that “mighty, crowning, unparalleled and triumphant exit from the flesh ” (S&H 117:21).

Praying to God for health, harmony, and well-being can be likened to people, five hundred years ago, praying for a round earth. It was already there, omnipresent. Five hundred years ago the round earth couldn’t have been closer, could it? So it is with every good thing. Christian Science, the ultimate, the final revelation, has re-

vealed the omnipresence of present perfection. We only need to *understand* it.

In being so slow to get instruction and directions right, we are like the 300 pound man wanting to lose weight. He was told by his doctor to run five miles a day for 300 days. At the end of the 300 days he called his doctor and said he had a problem.

“What’s the problem?” asked the doctor.

“I’m 1500 miles from home.”

Exemplifying the Divine Union

In the divine Mind, Truth and Love are wedded. This Truth, the manhood that I am, is indissolubly wedded to the Love, the womanhood that I am. Human undertakings, to be successful, must exemplify this divine union of Truth and Love. This is “according to the pattern showed thee in the mount.” Jesus said, “Be ye therefore perfect [be ye whole], even as your Father [infinite good] which is in heaven is perfect [whole].”

Both Jesus and Mary Baker Eddy saw the great importance of guarding against the devil, error, which is always trying to *divorce* Truth and Love in our consciousness. For example, we must be ever alert to exercise the spirit of goodwill in all our dealings with others—in family, church, business relations, etc. The devil would try to make us believe that warfare and strife can be justified in the name of “truth,” and that a “little disagreement” is inevitable and even clears the air. But the devil is a liar. A little disagreement can have drastic consequences—can tear families apart. The bitterest wars are holy wars, fueled by an unyielding self-righteousness.

“That’s marvelous, having a lion and a monkey in the same cage,” said the visitor at a small zoo. “How do they get along?”

“Okay, usually,” answered the zookeeper. “Occasionally they have a disagreement, and we have to get a new monkey.”

In the divine Mind there are no disagreements. No new monkeys are needed.

The appearance of geniality is not enough. To reach the height

of divine Mind we must see that the male Principle, Truth, and the female Principle, Love, are always *wedded* in our consciousness. Then “Truth through *HER* eternal laws unveils error” (S&H 542:7).

“A woman shall compass a man” prophesied Jeremiah, 31:22. He was talking about qualities, not people, telling us that Woman, Love, includes manhood, Truth. Let us continue to cultivate the wedding of Truth to Love in our effort to conquer all that is not God-like. Tending persistently to this wedding will bring the answer to our prayer—the only function of which is to make us aware of the perfection that already exists. This divine answer will result from the accumulation of our right thoughts and spiritual growth.

Let Truth do the work. Even as we cultivate right thoughts, thoughts of the Truth that conquer and heal, we must see that it is not *WE* who make the Truth work. The Truth is true and works by *Itself*. You and I only have to faithfully continue to declare it, realize it, become aware of it, and then let Truth do the work. In other words, get out of God's way. Only then can we obey the scriptural command to “Be fruitful [fruitful of right thoughts and deeds], and multiply [these right thoughts and deeds], and replenish the earth [with these right thoughts and deeds, and thus] subdue [all wrong thoughts and actions].” Only thus do we achieve the Divine Marriage, the full realization of our oneness with the infinite good we call God.

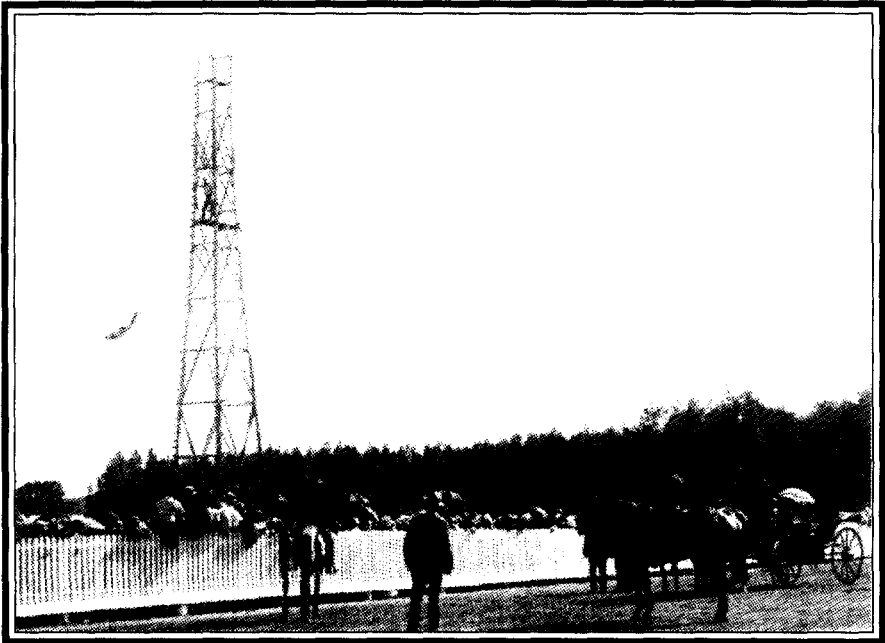
In Part II we'll be reminded that Jesus was crucified because he set fires under the belief that man is born of a woman. He stated plainly this was “the murderer from the beginning.”

Mary Baker Eddy fanned the flames with her assault on human birth, saying it was “the first death.” But those caught up in the net of Old Theology think child-bearing is something holy. Science and Health teaches it is just pie-in-the-sky mortal mind belief that thinks having a child is a blessed event. We can't believe Jesus' and Mary Baker Eddy's teaching and believe at the same time what the five physical senses say. Mortal existence is a dream from the womb to the tomb.

We can't have it both ways as we shall see when we come to the naked truth in Part II, where we are called to become what we ARE. Those who think sex is never going out of style are in for a shock.

Like Jesus and Mary Baker Eddy, we in this book are going to tread fearlessly where others haven't even dared to tiptoe.

Had Jesus for one minute thought that something other than his own Mind, the Principle that he was, had sovereign power, he never could have accomplished "his mighty crowning, unparalleled, and triumphant exit from the flesh" (S&H 117:21).



Mrs. Eddy in carriage at right watching the high diver Oscar Norin perform his feat before the Concord State Fair audience. Later that day Mr. Norin came to visit Mrs. Eddy. He had at a time earlier had one of his eyes removed because of an accident. Our Leader spoke with him a short time about his ability to overcome fear in his diving, and suggested that he could apply those lessons to his eye. Later, when the cabman took the diver to the train station he noticed that he had removed his glasses—both eyes were perfectly normal! Our Leader's quick, effective healing work was again blessing others.

PART II
MARY BAKER EDDY
ON MARRIAGE



Mrs. Eddy speaking, June, 1903, from the balcony
of Pleasant View to 10,000 Christian Scientists.

CHAPTER VI

MRS. EDDY'S TEACHING ON SEX AND PROGENY

Divine and Human Marriage

“When God bids one uncover iniquity, in order to exterminate it, one should lay it bare; and divine Love will bless this endeavor and those whom it reaches. Nothing is hid that shall not be revealed.*

"It is only a question of time, [until] God shall reveal His rod and show the plan of battle." (*Mis.* 348:9)

"The time cometh, *and now is*, for spiritual and eternal existence to be recognized and understood in Science. All is Mind. Human procreation, birth, life, and death are subjective states of the human erring mind; they are the phenomena of mortality, nothingness that illustrate mortal mind and body as *one*, and neither real nor eternal" (*Mis.* 286:19). Who believes this? Very few! But it is the great, great truth that is revealed in the Bible from its opening statement: "In the beginning God," to its closing statement: "The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all, Amen."

"Then shall humanity have learned that 'they which shall be accounted worthy to obtain that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage: neither can they die

*"Awake Thou that Sleepest" would have been a good title for this book, but that is the title of an excellent book by my good friend, Stanford Veira, C.S.

any more: for they are equal unto the angels..." (Luke 20:35, 36). "This, therefore, is Christ's plan of salvation..." (*My*. 269:5).

Mrs. Eddy's great discovery in 1866 was "*LIFE IN AND OF SPIRIT*" as "the sole reality of existence" (*Mis*. 24:17). This opened the door to *OUR MARRIAGE TO MIND*, Spirit, Soul, Principle, Life, Truth, and Love, and forever closed the door on "marriage synonymous with legalized lust" (*My*. 5:4).

In teaching the divine marriage—the unity which places each of us at the source of all creativity—Mrs. Eddy came face to face with its opposite, the human institution of marriage. As we have seen, the scriptural admonition to be fruitful and multiply means to multiply in spiritual understanding, and has nothing to do with human, mortal reproduction. When "we believe life starts with two pieces of matter coming together in sexual lust," we cannot at the same time believe that "Life is Mind, the creator reflected in His creations" (S&H 331:5), and that "All is infinite Mind and its infinite creation;" nor can we believe Jesus' prayer: "And now, O Father, Give me the glory I had with Thee before [this dream of life in matter—that came with human birth—overtook me]."

Because what Mrs. Eddy has written concerning "marriage, sex, and progeny" is still so far in advance of present understanding and demonstration, I will confine myself largely to quoting what Mary Baker Eddy, herself, in the *Second Coming of the Christ*, has written on these subjects, and what she is reported to have said. Armed with these spiritual revelations, that were dictated by God to Mary Baker Eddy, we will progress heavenward.

Mrs. Eddy noted the Scripture: "And Cain went out from the presence of the Lord, and dwelt in the land of Nod, and Cain knew his wife,' etc. Up to that, no mention was made of another woman save Eve, the mother of Cain. Eve in the Hebrew signifies 'beginning.' And the question is naturally suggested, Whence came the wife of Cain? Spirit creates all things. Man created from matter is mythological; with dust, a rib, and Cain's mother for his wife. Alas! Who shall say that a monkey was not our great-great grandfather!" (*Six Days of Revelation*, English version, page 68)

“To be born into the belief of life in matter is the last enemy to be overcome. [It's the last enemy because it keeps us from seeing that what is standing in front of us is God—is the omnipresence of present perfection.] Mankind has reached the last enemy and knows it not. But the divine overpowers the human and finally vanquishes it” (*D.C.C.* page 144).

“Christian Science reveals incontrovertibly that Mind is All-in-all, that the only realities are the divine Mind and idea” (S&H 109:4). “In divine revelation, material and corporeal selfhood disappear, and the spiritual idea is understood. The woman in the Apocalypse symbolizes generic man, the spiritual idea of God [generic man is another name for the coincidence of the human and divine]; she illustrates the coincidence of God and man as the divine Principle and the divine idea” (S&H 561:20).

Mrs. Eddy's mission was to reveal generic man—the man of your real and true Mind's creating. “Generic man is one with God.” And “what remains to lead on the centuries and reveal my successor is man in the image and likeness of God, man the generic term for mankind” (*My.* 347:2). All there is to man is Christ Science. As we accept this, all sense of trying to achieve is swallowed up in the divine “I am All.” The “I” is not a human mind enlightened by the Christ but is the Christ Itself.

“The material and mortal body or mind is not the man” (S&H 209:9). “Matter and Mind are opposites, hence both cannot be real...Only by understanding that there [are]...not two powers, matter and Mind,—are scientific and logical conclusions reached” (S&H 270:5).

These “logical conclusions” are totally rejected by mortal mind, which is adamant in “its belief that two pieces of matter coming together in sexual lust forms man.” Do we as Christian Scientists believe this? When Laura Sargent asked Mrs. Eddy, “Mother, what do you mean by ‘sin, sin, sin’?” Mrs. Eddy answered, “I mean the connubial relation” (A Carpenter Item).

Scriptural Teachings

Those versed in Scripture know that on the subject of human marriage dear St. Paul contended: "It is better to remain unmarried. For I would that all men were even as I am"—unmarried. He was echoing an oft overlooked teaching that permeates the Bible.

Jesus said, "...the days are coming in the which they shall say, Blessed are the barren, and the wombs that never bare" (Luke 23:29). Another passage with the same message says, "...Woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days" (Matt. 24:19). Mark 13:17 repeats the warning.

In Mark 12:25, Jesus said, "For when they shall rise from the dead [from the Adam dream of life in matter], they neither marry nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels which are in heaven." In Luke 20:34, "Jesus answering said unto them, The children of this world [the world of material sense] marry, and are given in marriage: But they which shall be accounted worthy to obtain that [spiritual] world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage: neither can they die anymore."

In Luke 17:27, Jesus reiterated: "They did eat, they drank, they married wives, they were given in marriage until the day that Noe entered into the ark, and the flood came, and destroyed them all."

Luke 21:23 repeats, "Woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck, in those days! for there shall be great distress in the land, and wrath upon this people."

Why this great outcry against marriage and childbearing?

Because that which is born of the flesh must die, must go the way of all flesh!

"Heaven," Mrs. Eddy taught, "is not a breeding ground for mortals." * This teaching is little understood even today.

*When the fellow called a motel and asked how much they charged for a room, the clerk told him the rates depended on room size and number of people. "Do you take children?" the man asked.

"No, sir," replied the clerk. "Only cash and credit cards."

“But every man is tempted,” says St. James, “when he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed. Then when lust hath conceived, it bringeth forth sin; and sin when it is finished, bringeth forth death” (James 1:14, 15). Do we as Christian Scientists believe this?

Jesus said unto them: “Why do ye not understand my speech, even because ye cannot hear my word. Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a *MURDERER* from the beginning, and abode not in the truth” (John 8:43-44).

In a class Mrs. Eddy pointed out: “The Psalmist, David, when awakened to the scientific sense of being, as the Scripture declares, ‘did that which was right in the eyes of the Lord’ and he lamented his material origin saying: ‘Behold, I was shapen in iniquity; and in sin did my mother conceive me’” (Psalms 51:5). But when he speaks of his “mother’s womb” in Psalms 139:13, he is referring to the womb of God; from that “womb” he was “fearfully and wonderfully made.”

Job, that Scriptural type of whom it was written “that man was perfect and upright, and one that feared God, and eschewed evil,” that same Job “opened his lips and said, ‘Let the day perish wherein I was born, and the night in which it was said, There is a man child conceived’” (Job 3:3). Mary Baker Eddy’s teachings confirm and explain Job’s scientific cry. Why? Because human birth is death to the spiritual world since it brings with it in belief, sin, disease, discord, death. It shuts out the great spiritual fact that what is at hand is always the presence of God—the omnipresence of present perfection.

In his Sermon on the Mount, our great Master said, “...I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart” (Matt. 5:28).

The Bible from its beginning passage contained in Genesis, “In the beginning...,” to its closing phrase in Revelation, “The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen,” confirms this theme.

In *The Gospel According to Thomas* (found in the remains of an extraordinary Coptic library), St. Thomas records: “They said unto [Jesus]: Shall we then, being children, enter the Kingdom? Jesus said to them: When you make the two one, and when you

make the inner as the outer and the outer as the inner and the above as the below, and when you make the male and the female into a single one, so that the male will not be male, and the female not be female,...then shall you enter the kingdom” (page 17). On page 45, he records: “Jesus said, Blessed is the womb which has not conceived and the breasts which have not suckled.” The Thomas Gospel ends with the sentence: “Every woman who makes herself male will enter the kingdom.”

How is this possible? God, infinite good, your Mind—having all the qualities of infinite good—is both male and female as one. “...as mortals give up the delusion that there is more than one Mind...man in God’s likeness [whole] will appear...As a material, theoretical life-basis is found to be a misapprehension of existence, the spiritual and divine Principle of man dawns on human thought...Thus the whole earth will be transformed by Truth on its pinions of light, chasing away the darkness of error” (S&H 191:4).

“Infinite Mind [your real Mind] is the creator, and creation is the image or idea emanating from this Mind [your Mind]” (S&H 256:32). This Mind is both masculine and feminine, embracing, as we have seen, Truth and Love as one. All the male and female qualities exist within every consciousness; otherwise *how could your name be “Christ Science”?* (See *Mis.* 167:14-15)

Let us not be guilty of putting asunder what “God hath joined together.” We are guilty if we see ourself as either male or female, and where is this distinction more pronounced than in the conjugal relationship?

Teaching Sexual Abstinence Brought Persecution

The great prophet Jeremiah, who must surely have glimpsed Life in and of Spirit in preexistence, wrote in Jer. 20:14-18: “Cursed be the day wherein I was born: let not the day wherein my mother bare me be blessed” He cursed that day “because he slew me not from the womb....Wherefore came I forth out of the womb to see labour and sorrow....” For this teaching, Jeremiah was put to death

by being “sawn asunder.”

In the apocryphal writings it is recorded that when St. Peter went to Rome and preached chastity and sexual abstinence, he was mercilessly tortured and put to death at the behest of the Roman Forum. The reason the Christians were put to the rack, fed to the lions, burned at the stake, crucified, and otherwise put to death in the most cruel ways men could think of, was not because they taught the Golden Rule; it was because the women, following the teachings of Jesus and St. Paul, *denied men sex*. Men found this intolerable.

Titus, a follower of the teachings of Paul, wrote in his Epistle in the *New Testament Apocrypha* that St. Paul’s recommendation of sexual abstinence, chastity, and asceticism did not sit well with the carnally-minded. Concerning “the sixty-fold reward of holiness” which, according to the teaching of the apostle Paul, the ascetic can gain through many pains, the Epistle of Titus reads: “Let us not lose courage, in the hardest labours, in affliction, in grief, in suffering abuse; we suffer persecution, but we are not forsaken, because we bear in our body the passion of Christ. Wherefore we are by no means overcome.”

Titus continues, “And again the same apostle [Paul] left an example behind him, describing his own disasters and saying: I have labored much. I have frequently been imprisoned, I have suffered extremely, many floggings, I have often fallen into deadly peril. Of the Jews, he says, I have five times received forty stripes save one, three times have I been beaten with rods, once have I been stoned; thrice have I suffered shipwreck, a day and a night I have spent in the depth of the sea; I have often journeyed, often been in peril of rivers, in peril of robbers, in peril among unbelievers in manifold ways, in peril of cities, in peril among Gentiles, in peril in the wilderness, in peril among false brethren; in trouble and labour, frequently in sorrow, in many watchings, in hunger and thirst, in many fastings, in cold and nakedness, in inward anxieties, besides the cares which do not have direct reference to my personal suffering. *And in all these I have not lost courage, because Christ was and*

still is with me.”

Just think, dear reader, Paul did this to help us attain unto glory through purity and chastity. Revelation 3:19 says, “As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten...” What almost unbelievable suffering Paul endured to help us gain the Christ life, and what joy awaits us when we have achieved it!

The apocryphal Epistle of Titus explains: “Blessed are they who have not polluted their flesh by craving for this world, but are dead to this world that they may live for God...such are to be called angels....Great and honorable is the divine promise which the Lord hath made with his own mouth to them that are holy and pure; He will bestow upon them what eyes have not seen nor ears heard, nor has it entered into any human heart. And from eternity to eternity there will be a race incomparable and [as yet] incomprehensible.

“Therefore it is said in the Gospel: Let your works shine before men that they may glorify your Father in heaven. Behold what a splendid structure is built in the heavenly Jerusalem [“home, heaven” (see S&H 589:15)]. In this city one contends rightly in a lonely position, without any intercourse with the flesh, as it stands in the Gospel: *In the coming age, says the Lord, they will neither marry nor be given in marriage, but will be as the angels in heaven.* Thus we must endeavor through blameless conduct to gain for ourselves everlasting honour in the future age....*The keeping holy of the Sabbath clearly means not to defile the pure flesh.* And therefore was it ordered in the books of the patriarchs that no unprofitable work should be done on the Sabbath. Clearly then it is a positive fact that God forbids the doing of the work of this world in the flesh that is dedicated to Him....[There can be no] violation of the virginity that has been consecrated to God.”

The “Estate of Chastity” in The Epistle of Titus ends with the words: “Blessed therefore are they who persevere even unto the end, as the Lord says: To him that overcometh will I grant to sit at my right hand in my throne, even as I have overcome and sit on the right hand of my Father [my divine Mind] in his throne to all ages for ever and ever. Amen.”

The First Error

Science and Health tells us, “Mortals can never understand God’s creation while believing man is a creator” (page 69:6). Do we see how important is Mary Baker Eddy’s statement that “two pieces of matter coming together in sexual lust is not a creator”? (Preserved by Blanche Hersey Hogue and Gilbert C. Carpenter, Sr.) “The belief of life in matter sins at every step” (page 542:1). In a class, when Mrs. Eddy was asked, “In teaching this Science, which is the leading error to be attacked?” She answered: “The first error of material birth [namely], the belief that man made you, and life was ever born into matter or the body” (*E.O.F.* page 196). Do we as Christian Scientists believe this?

Human birth pulls the veil over our eyes and makes us think we are matter personalities constituted of flesh, blood, and bones, instead of infinite harmonious God-beings, having the Mind of God. “The fundamental platform of Christian Science that “God makes and governs all” (S&H 532:2) absolutely discards a “union of the two sexes in order to create...the human family.”

“From *MORTAL MIND* comes the reproduction of the species [human reproduction]” (S&H 189:25). The Adam dream has given mankind the “notion that they can create what God cannot,—namely, sinful mortals in God’s image” (S&H 204:24). Thus, *in supposition*, we have “...the formation of so-called embryonic mortal mind, afterwards mortal men or mortals,—all this while matter is a belief, ignorant of itself, ignorant of what it is supposed to produce. The mortal says that an *inanimate unconscious seedling is producing mortals*, both body and mind.... This embryonic and materialistic human belief called mortal man in turn fills itself with thoughts of pain and pleasure, of life and death, and arranges itself into five so-called senses...” (S&H 190:1).

Lydia Hall has recorded that when Mrs. Eddy “received a letter...from Christian Scientists asking her to congratulate them over the birth of a Christian Science baby,” she read the letter aloud to the workers in her home, and “then with apparent indignation

uttered: ‘A Christian Science baby! A crime! Just as much a crime as a murder would be!’ [Why? Because it takes the individual out of his home in heaven, in Truth, in Love, and makes him believe himself in a world of sin, sickness, discord and death, instead of being forever aware that right here and now all we see or meet is God, and the omnipresence of present perfection. How many so-called Christian Scientists would even today agree with Mary Baker Eddy?] She paused...then raised her hand...and declared with great emphasis: ‘No loyal Christian Scientist will ever marry’” (*D.C.C.* page 255). It is clear that she was referring to (*My. 5:4*) “marriage synonymous with legalized lust”.

In this book we are confronting, as Mrs. Eddy did, mortal mind’s belief that man and woman are separate procreating genders, that mortal mind, the “*murderer from the beginning*”—acting through a matter body—can be a creator, that “two pieces of matter coming together in sexual lust can be a creator” and cause life.

"The false belief that sex, mortal mind, is a creator, is the curse of the mortal sense of existence." Mrs. Eddy tells us we must vigorously confront and contradict the belief of mortal creating, and it will die out. Human birth, resulting from sex, does nothing but pull the wool over our eyes making sin, disease, all discord, and death seem real.

“Thou ART Made Whole.”

Mortal mind’s end is *now*; it never was more than a false claim, which had no origin. Our real Mind, being all-inclusive, already contains and includes all, since all already exists in the perfection of being.

Ultimately we will see, as Mrs. Eddy taught, that the male and female natures are equally expressed in each individual. Each is of the nature of infinite completeness, in accord with Jesus’ statement to the man at the pool of Bethesda, “Thou art made whole.” There is never anything in our divine experience in which the male and female qualities are not infinitely at one. Spiritual inspiration is

perfectly balanced with scientific understanding; joy and love are balanced with courage and strength in our oneness with God.

Infinite good's creation, like the fact $2 \times 2 = 4$, has no beginning and no end. It is "self-evident error to suppose there can be such a reality as organic animal or vegetable life when such so-called life always ends in death" (S&H 309:27). As Mrs. Eddy contended: "May we not look forward to a human condition when perfection is nearer, wherein neither male nor female shall be known, and the race may reproduce itself otherwise than now?" (A Carpenter Item).

Wisdom Begins With What Is Nearest Right

Human marriage enshrines the most material beliefs of the Adam dream: that pleasure resides in the flesh, that *mortal matter can be a creator*, that the manifestation of Mind, the All and only, can be born of the flesh and die. These are beliefs that must be overcome if we are to consummate our oneness with infinite good.

In Science and Health, from the very first edition, Mrs. Eddy devotes a whole chapter to human marriage. Yet she does not use it to attack this institution. Why?

Mary Baker Eddy had seen that: "Wisdom in human action begins with what is nearest right under the circumstances, and thence achieves the absolute" (*Mis.* 288:13-15). While celibacy is divinely right, she realized it is impossible to force the consciousness of scientific being before it is understood. She established the Christian Science Publishing Society in part to help people understand what she wrote on marriage and celibacy.

In the love and dedication displayed in human marriage at its best, Mrs. Eddy found "what is nearest right under the circumstances," and made this a starting point in leading us to the absolute of divine marriage. "Until time matures human growth, marriage and progeny will continue,..." she tells us. "We look to future generations for ability to comply with absolute Science, when marriage shall be found to be man's oneness with God [infinite good]—the unity with eternal Love" [when it is understood that Spirit, God, your own real Mind is

the *ONLY* creator]” (*Mis.* 286:6).

While Mrs. Eddy makes it clear throughout her writings that the conjugal relation is embedded in error, in her Science and Health chapter, “Marriage,” she does not openly denounce this institution. Instead she advises Christian Scientists on how to develop the God qualities within it, while showing us that this is a temporary step on the way to our true marriage to our God-Mind.

The Science and Health chapter on “Marriage” was written as a “suffer it to be so now.” Mrs. Eddy stressed that two extremes must be watched, the first is to act, like a loose cannon, “too far in advance of our understanding, and to strike a blow too soon and so bring on a crisis that we are not fully prepared to meet and master” (*D.C.C.* page 259), while the second is apathy, not being active in Truth.

To a student Mrs. Eddy wrote: “It is always right to obey the Scripture, and when converted, to strengthen the brethren. But there is great wisdom to be used in knowing just how much to say, and when to say it. I recommend the *C. S. Journal* preserve a wise reticence on this subject until the world is more enlightened....May the God of all grace lead you gently into the gate that shuts out all that belongs to the flesh in origin or manifestation.”

Great Wisdom Must Be Used

On page 390 of the first edition’s Chapter VIII, “Healing the Sick,” Mrs. Eddy writes: “When Jesus [entering a remote and forbidding domain] introduced Christianity that cut off right hands and plucked out right eyes, demanding the control of our bodies [meaning the end of human birth] and a nobler existence, they said, ‘He is a Samaritan and hath a devil,’ i.e., we know his origin, and for him to claim, ‘I and the Father [Mind] are one,’ indicating he is God, is imposition....Unless we yield our educated opinions and beliefs, and reject the positions of personal sense [error], we shall neither discern our true being, nor understand the omnipotence of Spirit.”

Old Theology, which roams “Where ghosts and goblins stalk” (*Mis.* 396:4), clings to the restrictive mortal belief that procreation is

needed to replenish the earth. It would crucify the spiritual sense that adheres to what the prophets and Christ Jesus taught on the subject. While a Christian Scientist loves Protestant and Catholic, this belief of a matter origin—"that man begins in dust...as a material embryo," that fertilization of an egg results in the formation of a new matter entity—is so strongly entrenched in all religions, but especially in the Catholic religion, that Mrs. Eddy had to make a By-law, stating: "Neither the Pastor Emeritus nor a member of this Church shall teach Roman Catholics Christian Science, except it be with the written consent of the authority of their Church" (*Manual* 87:1).

But Mrs. Eddy soon found that she got the greatest resistance from her own materially-minded church members. The carnal mind says, "In the beginning two pieces of matter coming together in sexual lust forms life." How many Christian Scientist agree with their Leader on this, rather than with the carnal mind? The remnant shall be small and very feeble says scripture.

So strong, so universal is this belief of life in matter, that it was the main reason for Mrs. Eddy hiding her deeper spiritual teachings in the textbook that was written for all mankind. She knew it would arouse deep resentments in all religions, and so make it harder for genuine Christian Scientists if she continued to openly teach this great divine fact.

The chapter on Marriage in Science and Health became a bridge to meet students at the level of their understanding and gently lead them heavenward. However, privately Mrs. Eddy continued to teach as Jesus had taught when he told Salome that death would "never cease until ye women cease your childbearing."

The World's Wrath

Mrs. Eddy said that if she had not written the chapter "Marriage," her great divine discovery would have been lost. Why? Ask yourself, do we as Christian Scientists agree with Christ Jesus, and with Mary Baker Eddy in the Second Coming of the Christ? They taught:

"From mortal mind [the carnal mind] comes the reproduction [of mortal man].... The mortal says that an inanimate unconscious seedling is producing mortals [that "two pieces of matter coming together in sexual lust forms life and man"] (S&H 189:25-190:5). "Mortals are the counterfeits of immortals...The wicked one, or one evil, declares that man begins in dust or as a material embryo" (S&H 476:1).

"The belief that...man springs from dust or an egg is the result of the mortal error which Christ or Truth destroys" (S&H 485:19). Mrs. Eddy asks: Is the germ of humanity in a circumscribed and unintelligent egg? "An egg [even though fertilized through sexual lust] is an impossible enclosure for Deity" (S&H 550:23). "If man is material and originates in an egg...who shall say that he is not primarily dust" (S&H 543:18-25). "Adam was created before Eve. In this instance it is seen that the maternal egg never brought forth Adam. Eve was formed from Adam's rib, not from a foetal ovum" (S&H 553:17).

Mrs. Eddy defines Eve as, "...the *BELIEF* that the human race originated materially instead of spiritually..." (S&H 585:23).

"The belief of life in matter sins at every step...it would kill Jesus that it might be rid of troublesome truth" (S&H 542:1). See also the side marginal heading here: "Murder brings its curse." Both Jesus and Mrs. Eddy taught that bringing a child into the world was murder. (See *DCC*, page 256). It is murder because it blots out our true divine being,—blots out "the glory [we] had with Thee before this [dream of life in matter overtook us]." It blots out the fact that what is this minute appearing before me is God, and that we can never get outside "the mighty actuality of all-inclusive God, good" (S&H 52:31). Do you, as a Christian Scientist agree with Jesus and Mary Baker Eddy on this all-embracing, crucial point?

Materiality, worldliness, human pride—total ignorance of humanity's divinity—made it (and still make it) almost impossible for people to accept Mrs. Eddy's spiritual teaching regarding conjugal sin and procreation. Mrs. Eddy saw that people need to be led into this great truth gradually.

Two thousand years ago, Jesus was nailed to a cross for his teachings on marriage and progeny—teachings such as: "Blessed are

the wombs that never bare,” and “death will never cease until ye women cease your child-bearing.” The high priests reasoned that if no more children were born their nation would perish. Caiaphas, the high priest for that year, said, “...it is expedient for us, that one man should die...that the whole nation perish not” (John: 11: 50). It is sometimes said that Jesus was crucified because the Pharisees and high priests did not understand him. The truth is they understood him only too well. How many Christian Scientists would reject Jesus on this subject, if he appeared today?

The decision to crucify Jesus had nothing to do with the Romans. Jesus had always advocated: “Render unto Caesar the things that are Caesar’s, and unto God the things that are God’s” (Mark XII:17 & Matt. 22:21). The Romans would never quarrel with that!

The crucifixion of Jesus had everything to do with what he taught about procreation. He knew the real man is spiritual, “never born [of the flesh] and never dying.” This truth needed to be told and retold, even in the face of crucifixion. Jesus, and after him Paul and all the disciples, were put to death because they taught sexual abstinence.

Mrs. Eddy faced much the same dilemma. Had she lived 200 or even 100 years earlier, she would likely have been considered a witch, and hung or burned at the stake for teaching that bringing a child into the world through sexual lust was “murder.” As she remarks in *Fragments*, on page 27, “If today we should openly declare that God, good, could annul the curse of sin, shorten the earth’s period of propagation, and find matter no factor in forming the objects of earth, what would be said of such a radical truism? Precisely what is said: ‘there is no *thus saith the Lord*’ for this matter-annihilating Truth of divine Science, even though Jesus declared and explained its Principle.”

Mrs. Eddy knew that she, as today’s Wayshower, must present this great truth, and her love for humanity made her willing to endure the world’s wrath, though it cost her dearly.

“I am *alone, absolutely*, here!” she said, “No one can know me really, or can see what I have to meet, or meet it for me...God is

manifesting Himself and Herself to me in marvels! But for this I could not stand the hatred and its venom towards *me alone*.”

Why was such hatred directed toward her, alone? Because she was annihilating what the whole world believed in, namely, “human procreation, birth, life, and death [that] are the subjective states of the human erring mind...the phenomena of mortality, nothingness, that illustrate mortal mind and body as *one*, and neither real nor eternal” (*Mis.* 286:21). Today many teachers, preachers and authors are using Mrs. Eddy's ideas on all subjects except the one on procreation—the one that caused Jesus to be crucified and Mrs. Eddy to be maligned, persecuted, and rejected by even Christian Scientists.

Few in the world even today are ready to see this great truth, to teach which Jesus braved the scourge and the cross. Mary Baker Eddy said in the first edition that it may take another thousand years before the world in general understands and abides with it.

The Hardest Lesson

Visit with an Eddy student

The lesson Mrs. Eddy had to teach was a necessary but difficult one: namely, that *human birth is the first death*. When a good student brought her new-born baby to see our Leader, Mrs. Eddy held it tenderly, and said, “I love it, but I feel very sorry for it.” She told those living in her home that bringing a child into the world was “*murder*” (alias the first death). Do we realize that “probation after death” is *here and now*? Do we know why? Probation after death is here, right now, precisely because human *birth* is the first death—it is incidental to the belief of life in matter.

A half century ago, when my husband and I lived in southern Illinois, our landlady, who knew of my interest in Christian Science, said to me one day, “There is a lady in Centralia who went through class with Mrs. Eddy.” At our first opportunity my husband and I drove to Centralia, Illinois, and found the lady at home. Because I had already seen much of what Mrs. Eddy had written on sex and procreation, we soon got into those subjects. It turned out that this

lady had been in the class in which Mrs. Eddy explained many of the foregoing statements on procreation.

In that class a student asked:

“But, Mrs. Eddy, what would happen if no more children were born?”

Mrs. Eddy, perhaps grateful the question had been bluntly asked, answered forcefully, “*The SOONER THE WHOLE GHASTLY FARCE WOULD CEASE!*”

This is a hard lesson and certainly one likely to invite the world’s wrath. The mesmerism of Old Theology makes people believe in a mortal creation. How long would churches and preachers last if there were no weddings, christenings, and baptizings? Old Theology was Mrs. Eddy’s bitterest enemy and crucified her the most malignantly. How many Christian Scientists agree with Old Theology’s belief in a mortal creation?

Rise to Grasp the Spiritual Idea

Mrs. Eddy’s teachings on mortal birth and death are facts that eventually all will learn, just as we have all learned that the earth is round and not flat. However, the most any spiritual teacher or book can accomplish is to lead the student to the realization that the kingdom of God is within his consciousness, and inspire him with the desire to study until he realizes his oneness with that kingdom within. Only those with a deep spiritual hunger can be lifted by a spiritual teacher into the God experience. Few, even today, have “risen to grasp the spiritual idea unenviored by materiality” (*My*. 122:21).

Take, for example, Mrs. Eddy’s statement to her early pupils: “You, my students, are God.” A hundred and twenty-five years ago, Mrs. Eddy herself may have been the only person on earth who could understand such fundamental truth, the fundamental truth that human birth veiled and hid. Such sublime, such deep sacred teaching, shining through the mists of materiality, is not truly understood even today, after a century and a quarter of teaching. It is not even theoretically glimpsed, except by the pure in Spirit.

Mary Baker Eddy saw that what she wrote about the real creation as “never born and never dying”—as forever the reflection of the divine Mind—was too far in advance of what students in her day could understand. And what is not understood is lost. Yet to the extent that it was comprehended by Old Theology it would bring down the wrath of the world on infant Christian Science.

Flanked on one side by Old Theology, with the pinched demeanor of an old-time orthodox minister, and on the other by the medical world with its zeal for the material, how could she, 130 years ago, break out of what looked like a gigantic mousetrap? It would have been hard enough for a man, but a *woman*? “Bah!” Women a hundred and thirty years ago had few of the rights they have today. But leaning on God, trusting in Truth—and having no other trusts—she led us in careful stages through this quagmire, starting with her chapter on “Marriage.”

Mrs. Eddy urged us in our hours of prayer to let go of our “sense of selfhood—all that is involved in the belief of birth, heredity, association, time, decay, death.” Then, as we begin to reject mortal mind’s illusions and resolutely insist, “I am infinite understanding, infinite perfection, here and now,” we will grow out of mortal mind’s misconceptions.

Little by little, through the teaching of the Second Coming of the Christ we will accept what has been revealed: that “I am Mind, Spirit, Soul, Principle, Life, Truth, and Love,” and all that these divine terms stand for. To this allness, that in reality I am, nothing can be added since this “I Am” already is All. We already are and have all; we need only open our eyes and awaken to this fact, this great spiritual truth.

Times are changing. Many churches today are encouraging healing and positive thinking. Ministers are studying Mrs. Eddy’s writings and this is being reflected in their sermons. Will they come to embrace her teachings on marriage as well?

CHAPTER VII

THE FIRST EDITION ON MARRIAGE

“Suffer It To Be So Now”

Let us take a look at the chapter Mary Baker Eddy wrote to protect her great revelation, the chapter in which she directly addresses the human institution of marriage.

What Mary Baker Eddy said in the first edition chapter Marriage has changed very little in the many revisions of our textbook. At its beginning, on page 314, she quotes Jesus, saying, “Suffer these things to be so now, for thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteousness,” telling us that the time has not yet come for the human institution of marriage to be cast aside.

On page 319 our Leader admonishes us, “The formation and education of even mortal mind must improve before the millennium,” because “the false views we entertain of being, hide the eternal harmony and produce the ills of which we complain.” How does her teaching on marriage improve “even mortal mind”?

Asked, “What do you think of marriage?” Mary Baker Eddy replied, “It is often convenient, sometimes pleasant, and occasionally a love affair. Marriage is susceptible of many definitions. It sometimes presents the most wretched condition of human existence. To be normal it must be a union of the affections that tends to lift mortals higher” (*Mis.* 52:12).

In *E.O.F.*, on page 80, she said: “The tendency of the desire for the sweet companionship of the opposite sex is divinely natural. Remember primarily the individual was equal and wholly satisfied. He was God’s image and reflection, the reflection of Father-Mother (meaning the Mind that is Love). Learn not to condemn this long-

ing, because it is about the only thing in a human being that, seen for what it is, indicates his divine entity. In the beginning *MAN AND WOMAN WERE ONE*, and mortal mind made the separation. Therefore the constant longing for completion....”

In *Miscellaneous Writings* on page 288:16 Mrs. Eddy answers the question: “Is marriage nearer right than celibacy?” saying, “Human knowledge inculcates that it is, while Science indicates that it is *not*. But to force the consciousness of scientific being before it is understood is impossible....”

“To abolish marriage *at this period* and maintain morality and generation, would put ingenuity to ludicrous shifts; yet this is possible in Science, although it is today problematic” (*Mis.* 286:15). “Whatever is humanly conceived is a departure from divine law; hence its mythical origin and certain end. According to the Scriptures,—St. Paul declares astutely: ‘For of Him [God, your real Mind], and through Him [God, Mind], and to Him [God, Mind], are all things.’ Man [idea, reflection, image, shadow] is incapable of originating; nothing can be formed apart from God, good, the all-knowing Mind [your real Mind]. What seems to be of human origin is the counterfeit of the divine,—even human concepts, mortal shadows flitting across the dial of time” (*Mis.* 71:21).

Divine Love will eventually cause each one of us to turn and find in God (infinite good) what we have always vainly looked for in each other. The kingdom of God is within your consciousness and it contains the answer for every longing, every “immortal craving.”

“The absolute in divine Science is an infinite fact approachable in time by degrees; its ultimate is eternity, its footsteps are time. Marriage and offspring are mortal conditions which take their origin in the human, and not in the divine Mind. It is a great and solemn question how far to press the divine facts of being, and their manifestation, into present human experience and practice” (Carpenter Foundation item).

One thing we can safely press is Love. “The Principle of Christian Science is Love, and the effect of Love is to destroy all sense of corporeality. [The belief in corporeality is the only anti-

Christ]....Watch and be sure your love is increasing and your false sense of personality is diminishing, and make everything you say and do tend to produce this effect” (*E.O.F.* page 71).

Building the Bridge

In the first edition of *Science and Health*, we find “Marriage” as the sixth chapter. Why is it the *third* chapter in the last edition?

In revising *Science and Health*, Mrs. Eddy saw that our first step, Chapter I, must concern itself with Prayer, with desire and striving for the spiritual. Chapter II, “Atonement and Eucharist,” then urges us to rise above the material *SENSE* of things, to lay down the false.

The chapter Marriage—in all editions—tells us to do the best we know. Here we find guidance such as: “Happiness is spiritual, born of Truth and Love. It is unselfish; therefore it...requires all mankind to share it.

“Human affection is not poured forth vainly, even though it meet no return. Love enriches the nature, enlarging, purifying, and elevating it. The wintry blasts of earth may uproot the flowers of affection, and scatter them to the wind; but this severance of the fleshly ties serves to unite thought more closely to God, for Love supports the struggling heart until it ceases to sigh over the world and begins to unfold its wings for heaven” (*S&H* 57:18).

“Unselfish ambition, noble life motives, and purity,—these constituents of thought...constitute...true happiness, strength, and permanence....With additional joys, benevolence should grow more diffusive....Home is the dearest spot on earth, and it should be the centre, though not the boundary, of the affections” (*S&H* 58:7-23).

“There should be the most tender solicitude for each other’s happiness, and mutual attention and approbation should wait on all the years of married life” (*S&H* 59:3). “The good in human affections must have ascendancy over the evil and the spiritual over the animal, or happiness will never be won” (*S&H* 61:4).

As we apply such practical advice in our daily lives we will develop our own best qualities. The chapter on marriage goes far-

ther than that, however. It gently lifts our sights with statements such as, “The scientific morale of marriage is spiritual unity” (S&H 61:30) and “Matrimony, which was once a fixed fact among us, must lose its present slippery footing, and man must find permanence and peace in a more spiritual adherence” (S&H 65:25).

When the chapter Marriage is placed as Chapter III, the progression of these first three chapters shows us that our prayer for at-one-ment with divinity leads to the realization that *WHAT GOD HAS JOINED TOGETHER IS THE TRUE “SINLESS HUMANHOOD” AND THE DIVINE.* (See *Un.* 49:8.)

On the basis of this understanding, Chapter IV, “Christian Science versus Spiritualism,” can then launch us into a different realm—a realm of ideas, where we can begin to receive revelation. It shows us that if Mind is All-in-all there cannot be a matter universe, and that “each successive period of progress is a period more humane and spiritual” (*Mis.* 26:4-5).

Mrs. Eddy knew that not one millionth part of what is true about you and me and all mankind has as yet been discerned spiritually, but by making Marriage the third chapter she could begin to prepare us to understand the system of Christian Science. Once we learn the “system” underlying divine metaphysics, we will be able to work it just as we work the system of mathematics.

To work the systems of math and music you don’t have to have the God-character; but this is different in Christian Science; here the God-character is necessary. The carnal mind claims to be our mind. For us to grow spiritually, our life must be focused, dedicated, disciplined, and this carnal mind, this “...mortal mind [must be] purged of the animal and human, and submerged in the humane and divine, giving back the lost sense of man in unity [marriage] with, and reflecting, his Maker” (*Mis.* 184:31).

Our destiny depends on our mental conduct. Suppose a tape-recorder picked up every thought we had during the day. Would we be embarrassed to have others hear it? Actually, everything we think, say or do *IS* recorded. Where? In the subconscious mind. The circumstances of our life tomorrow are molded by our mental behavior

and deportment of today.

For more than 100 years doctors have speculated that if there was proper elimination man would live forever. In Christian Science we learn that if there is proper elimination of all the negative and animal qualities of thought we will be divine and eternal, immortal.

Before we can accomplish results in the system of divine metaphysics, “the human self must be evangelized” and the God-character attained. Mary Baker Eddy’s first three chapters in *Science and Health*: “Prayer,” “Atonement and Eucharist,” and “Marriage,” teach us how the evangelization is to be done, as good thoughts and right thinking build a bridge to the spiritual. Then, when we are ready, the fourth chapter, “Christian Science vs. Spiritualism,” can teach us what *reality is*.

What “Marriage” Teaches

Let’s look further at what the chapter on Marriage in the first edition has to tell us.

“Because the belief of intelligent matter is accepted, and the opposite Science of mind rejected, shall we submit it is true, or that the so-called laws of sense are superior to laws of Soul [true identity]?” page 320 asks.

No, indeed! As page 322 warns: “The broadcast powers of evil so conspicuous today, is the materialism of the age struggling against the spiritual era that advances.”

But the same page promises: “...the time cometh when there will be no marrying or giving in marriage, but we shall be as the angels; the Soul [true identity] rejoicing in its own mate wherein the masculine Wisdom and feminine Love are embraced in the understanding [in the understanding of *each* individual consciousness].”

Thus we see that even in this chapter, where the focus is on the human institution of marriage, the true, divine marriage is ever at the core, and the purpose is always to wean us from the one to the other, from the counterfeit to the real.

On page 325 Mary Baker Eddy explains: "...the epoch approaches when to understand this Principle [namely that our divine Mind is our Principle] will form the basis of all harmony and progress. At present we live ridiculously for fear of being thought ridiculous; are slaves to fashion, appetite, and sense [forgetting that everything worth cherishing begins in the heart not in the head, in spiritual understanding, not in sense testimony]; in the future we shall learn Soul [true identity] is an architect that makes men and women beautiful, noble, and not to be blotted out."

True education, Mary Baker Eddy tells us, unfolds the infinite resources of being; but mistaking his origin and nature, we call man both matter and Spirit, thinking that the intellectual, the moral, the spiritual—our true identity—exists apart from us. Our conception of man as a physical being, she tells us, "is the Pandora box, from which all ills have gone forth, especially despair" (S&H page 170:30).

To govern the body scientifically we must admit only Mind, because the only way we can control the body is to become aware of our God-being. "God is the Mind of man," and "man has no Mind but God." To break the mental hallucinations that rob man of his birthright from God, making him believe in sin, sickness and death, we must continually argue on the side of our God-being. We should be the attorney for the side we want to win.

"Many sleep who should keep themselves awake and waken the world." We are like the church-goer, whose wife said to the pastor after a service, "I hope you don't take it personally, Reverend, when my husband walks out during your sermon."

"I do find it rather disconcerting," the preacher replied.

"It's not a reflection on you, Sir. Ralph has been walking in his sleep ever since he was a child." We too have been sleep-walking since "birth," and we keep walking out of the sermons that should awaken us.

Man's existence as the reflection of our God-being—our God-Mind—is comprehended only as we continually deny personal sense. The mind must be emptied of all the beliefs that deny Truth. The

belief that Soul (true identity) is in the body and that matter is the medium of Spirit is a *dream, a delusion*. But we are not aware that it is *only a dream*.

Many times in the first edition Mrs. Eddy reminds us “we are Soul,” which she defined as God, and the chapter on marriage is no exception. On page 355 of the first edition, she writes:

“Science reveals to spiritual understanding the body without sensation, and man the reflex shadow of Soul [true identity, spiritual understanding], and Soul [God, which we are] embracing all the faculties of being, having no lack of emotion, speech, sight, or sound; and possessing the consciousness of all things; its blessings are not at the disposal of organization, that accident or disease can destroy [any more than accident or disease could destroy $2 \times 2 = 4$]. All being is spiritual and not material, for this is the scientific statement of being, the basis of immortality, and we shall all ultimately learn this....

“Every theory opposed to this prolongs sickness, sin and death, making that which is immortal in understanding, mortal in belief. When the *belief* of Life and Intelligence in matter disappears, its physical manifestation will cease, and mortal man return to dust, and why? *because he was simply a belief, and this belief an error [hypnotic suggestion] instead of the reality of being; for man, Mind’s reflection, is not matter, and never dies.*”

Both Jesus and Mrs. Eddy proved that when we are on the same plane of consciousness as those gone before; we can know and converse with them, as Jesus knew and conversed with Moses and Elias even though they had passed on centuries before. Oh! happy thought! To prove that the body, called mortal man, is error and not Truth, we have only to find it mortal. The belief of Life and Intelligence in matter is destroyed; but Life and man still *are*, and ever will be!

As Mary Baker Eddy tells us on page 356 of the first edition’s chapter Marriage, “Matter is not the medium through which Spirit acts or is manifested....Spirit is infinite because it is Intelligence [Mind]. What then can limit it? Again, to Spirit, Intelligence alone is Substance, and there is no matter. If the body was intelligent it

could never return to dust, for mind dies not, and Intelligence never developed from matter.”

Statements from Chapter I, First Edition

To help us more fully understand what Mary Baker Eddy’s Chapter VI, “Marriage,” in the first edition of *Science and Health* is saying about who and what we are, let us review a few of that book’s salient truths regarding our Mind’s marriage to the infinite good we call God.

On page 11, Chapter I, of the first edition we read:

“Spirit is Truth, matter its opposite; viz., error; and these two forces control man and the universe, and are the tares and wheat that never mingle, but grow side by side until the harvest, until matter is self-destroyed; for not until then do we *learn ourselves Spirit...*”

Note that we are to “*learn ourselves Spirit.*” Spirit is a term Mary Baker Eddy uses for God, to tell us that Mind is the *only*. Since “God [Mind] is All,” and there can’t be anything besides “ALL,” we must be God when we gain the true understanding of Spirit and Mind.

Mrs. Eddy is telling us that our oneness with God, the marriage of our Mind to God, must be “*learned.*” This is needed, she continues on the same page, for us to “yield up the ghost of error, that would make substance, Life and Intelligence matter. [Infinite good] and [its] idea are all that is real primitively; all is mind, and mind produces mind only.”²

The “tares” growing among the “wheat” are the beliefs of matter, which she calls “personal sense,” her term for error in the first edition. Explaining error, she tells us “the dream of Life in matter, is a *supposition only* of reality and substance, of Life and Intelligence, of good and evil, that would limit Soul [your true identity], and doom all things to decay.... The *BELIEF* of Life in matter is

²In later editions Mrs. Eddy capitalized Mind in statements like this, to distinguish it from mortal mind or the carnal mind

all that dies. The Principle [that you are, that is your Mind, that is the Soul, and Life of man] is not in the body, and cannot die.”

On page 14, we read: “...we naturally ask what are we and what is man? *We are Spirit, Soul* [both terms for *God*, infinite good, and true identity].... *God and the idea of God* [are one and they] are real, and nothing else is real.”

The *you, or the “I” or “Us” is our Mind, God, Cause*. “*God is individual Mind* [your Mind]. This one Mind and [Its] individuality comprise the elements of all forms and individualities, and prophesy the nature and stature of Christ, the ideal man” (*Mis.* 101:31).

We never start right until we see that we are Mind, Soul (spiritual understanding, true identity) and that our body—manifestation, reflection—is what is called “man.” On page 225 of the first edition, Mrs. Eddy informs us: “*WE ARE SPIRIT [GOD]*, but, knowing this not, we go on to vainly suppose ourself body, and not Soul [spiritual understanding].”

On pages 10-11 of the first edition she writes: “We learn from science that mind [your Mind] is universal, the first and only cause of all that really is.” It’s *your Mind* that is the cause of all that exists. Our own mentality, when in line with Truth, is the divine Mind, the kingdom of God (understanding) within our consciousness. Spiritual understanding and God are one and the same; understanding denotes our Mind’s marriage to God, to Life, Truth, and Love.

Jesus, our Wayshower, said, “I am the Life.” The “Life” here is God. We know we are alive. Science and Health tells us, “God is the only Life,” and only Life, God, lives. Since we live, we must *BE* Life, God. On page 16 of the first edition Mary Baker Eddy calls this age to contemplate and imitate the *CHRIST CHARACTER*. “Life is not structural and organic, for Life is Spirit [good], Soul [spiritual understanding] and not sense, and without beginning and without end. Life is Principle and not person.... To gain the harmony of being, and be perfect...God [our real Mind and identity as one with infinite good] must be understood.”

“Be a Law to Yourselves”

On page 31 of the first edition, we read: “...we should be a law of Life and Truth to our own bodies, even the higher law of Soul [our true identity] that prevails over sense, and gives harmony and immortality to all it controls.”

Mrs. Eddy has much to say about “law.” In the Concordance to the last edition of *Science and Health* there are more than 340 references to “law,” “laws,” and “lawgiver.” On page 442 of our textbook, we read, “Christian Scientists, be a law to yourselves.” The Christianly scientific man reflects the divine law and becomes a law unto himself. How different this is from the ecclesiastical view of the five member Board of Directors of 1947, as published in the *C.S. Journal*, Vol. 65: “The Mother Church is the watchful and tender guardian of the human consciousness in its ascent Godward!”

Both the Bible and *Science and Health* demand that we “*work out our own* salvation.” Our Leader lovingly seeks to place us on our own feet, rather than keeping us forever dependent on an ecclesiastical structure, or anything else outside our own Mind. The Directors’ directive, quoted above, does not tell you that—according to her *Church Manual*—the Mother Church should have come to an end six months after Mrs. Eddy’s passing, December 1910, because—according to its estoppel—no officer of the Mother Church could be elected at the June Mother Church meeting without the consent of the Pastor Emeritus, Mary Baker Eddy. Nor does the statement tell you that this *Manual By-Law* was deliberately disobeyed. (See *Church Manual* page 25-26.) Mrs. Eddy probably knew this disobedience would take place, because she told her loyal followers, “Only suffering will teach them God’s will.”

Mary Baker Eddy wanted us to rule ourselves. In her article on “Life” (Vol. I, *Der Herald*, No. 4, April, 1918), she tells us we can do everything right with Principle (the Principle that we *are*). “We can ask a doctor to heal us,” she says, but then adds, “We can do more than that with a Principle, we *can work it ourselves* to this result, and following its divine rule, with [it] we can destroy sick-

ness, sin, and death, and this in accordance with the Scripture, ‘Work out your own salvation...For it is God [your real Mind] which worketh *in you*.’...Sin, sickness, death, are error; they are beliefs; and this fact found out will at length destroy them.”

“Truth, Life, and Love [the dictates of our real Mind] are the only legitimate and eternal demands on man, and they are spiritual lawgivers, enforcing obedience through divine statutes” (S&H 184:12).

We don’t need a centralized material church organization because, as the first edition continues, “...the infinite [meaning our oneness with God, Love,] is achieved only as we turn from the finite, and from the personal error to the impersonal Truth of being...” (First edition, page 34). “Apprehending God [our true Mind], the only Life and Intelligence of man, is the foundation of harmony, but to gain this understanding of Soul [our true identity] the Principle that gave man dominion over earth, ‘tis necessary to *UNDERSTAND ONE’S SELF SPIRIT [God]* and not matter” (First edition, page 38).

Not Matter But Spirit; Not Sense But Soul

On page 39 we come to a crucial statement: “*Jesus regarded himself Principle* instead of person; hear his words: ‘I am the way, the *Truth, and Life*.’” Principle, Truth and Life are all synonyms for God. Jesus, our great teacher, example, and Wayshower, said he was “Truth and Life” and that no one cometh unto the Principle of his being “except through me,” Truth. “...Science alone reveals Principle, hence it [Science] is the Comforter that leads into all Truth....Man is the reflex *shadow* of God, [of Mind, Spirit, Soul, which constitute the divine Principle which, in reality, you and I are.]

Here especially note *SHADOW*. Mrs. Eddy says that “matter held as *shadow* is an idea of God.” How wonderful to know there is nothing to reject! Even a shadow is useful since it indicates the reality which is casting the shadow.

Again on page 39, Mrs. Eddy states: “...understanding is Soul,

which is Spirit [both terms for God].” Near the bottom of page 39, she adds: “...to know we are Soul and not body is starting right.” Matter cannot be the image and likeness of the infinite good called God to which we are wedded.

On page 41 we read: “The higher [Jesus] wrought the problem of being through spiritual Science, the more odious he became to the materialistic world that understood him not [as he would today to all who think life begins with the fertilization of a female egg]. Life, Intelligence and substance to them were matter, but to him they were God, the Truth of man; therefore he *reckoned himself not matter but Spirit [God]; not sense, but Soul [God, true identity]*....Jesus said, ‘I and the Father [Mind] are one,’ and this separated him from theology and the rabbis; *understanding himself Soul instead of body, and that Soul was God* brought down upon him the anathema of a world [even as it would today if he were here, in the flesh, among us].”

As we awaken from the Adam dream, the hypnotism that blinds us, we will see that we have the God-character, but, as page 44 tells us, “the reality, or Spirit, is ours only as we are good.” On page 46 Mrs. Eddy asks, “But how are we to escape from flesh, or mortality...?” and answers: “By understanding we never were flesh, that *we are Spirit [God]* and not matter;” later in the first edition she states that “the shocking audacity that calls itself God, and yet demonstrates only erring mortality, surprises us.”

The tendency of some students to misuse her frank statements of Science—the truths so openly expressed here in the first edition of Science and Health—is one reason she later chose to hide the deepest truths, so they could not be perverted in this way. Mrs. Eddy makes it clear more than once that a human individual is not God or His Christ. She says “Christ is the true idea of the one and only God, therefore no mortal on earth can be the idea of divine Principle.” “[Jesus] *made himself the Son of God*” (John 19:7) *by his understanding and works. So must we.*

Going to page 47 of the first edition, we read: “The Science of being was revealed to the virgin-mother, who, in part proved the great Truth that God is the only origin of man. The conception of

Jesus illustrated this Truth, and finished the example of creation...born of woman, that is, having in part a personal origin, he blended the idea of Life that is God, with the belief of Life in matter, and became the *connecting link* between Science and personal sense [error]; ‘and took upon himself flesh,’ became apparent as the half-way position of positive Science; thus to mediate between God and man....His scientific understanding of being gave him control over matter.”

For us, awash in the ignorance imposed by eons of false education, it seems easier to desire Truth than to get rid of error. “...therefore,” Mrs. Eddy says on page 54, “to be the recipient of Truth, *we must begin to recognize ourselves Soul [God, true identity]* and not body....We must avoid the yielding to error demanded by error.”

In the 1910 edition of Science and Health, page 598:23, our Leader states: “One moment of divine consciousness, or the spiritual understanding of Life and Love, is a foretaste of eternity. This exalted view, obtained and retained when the Science of being is understood, would bridge over with life discerned spiritually the interval of death, and man would be in the full consciousness of his immortality and eternal harmony, where sin, sickness, and death are unknown.”

But this “exalted view” is only obtained through deep consecrated study, as she explains on pages 56 and 57 of the first edition: “Man never obtains immortality until the standpoint whence he reckons himself in all the summing up of Life and Intelligence, is *Soul [God]* and not sense....Who believes that gender belongs to the man in the mirror? Gender is Principle and not person, and man is shadow and not substance....Mortal man is but a dream of Intelligence, substance and Life in matter, not the man of God, but the man of man, and shadow of shadows; therefore he reflects no Principle, and is without any real basis....The ultimatum of being corroborates the statement that man is shadow and not substance...” Belief—false belief—is all there is to mortal man.

Page 62 warns: “Our present standpoint is body, not Soul, personality instead of Principle, hence our mistaken views and their consequences in sin, sickness and death.” Page 59 reiterates: “We

must *recognize ourself Soul [God]* and not body....But in order to do this we must grow away from all that is error and become pure in Spirit to receive and impart the lessons of Spirit.” Let’s pay strict attention, since this teaching was dictated by God, infinite good.

Statements From Chapter II of First Edition

In “Imposition and Demonstration,” Chapter II of the First Edition of Science and Health, we continue our Spiritward journey. In later editions this chapter is called “Christian Science versus Spiritualism,” and is the fourth chapter.

“*WHEN WE ARE SPIRIT,*” Mrs. Eddy tells us after a brief introduction, “we shall have gained the high import of this Scripture, ‘I and the Father [Mind] are one,’ and shall find, too, this oneness occasions no loss of identity, but that ‘*I signifies Spirit* and not matter, *Principle* and not person, *Soul* [true spiritual identity] and not body, even the Intelligence represented by all ideas....The question at present is, whether this ‘I’ is Principle or person, Soul or body, yea, God or man? Principle is Soul [spiritual understanding], Intelligence, the ‘I am,’ [in Truth I am Principle, Soul, Intelligence], but where do we place the ‘I’....? The Science of being reveals...this “I” not body, nor in body, but Soul [your true identity, spiritual understanding] outside of matter...and through this reckoning, man gains eternal identity.”

On page 67 Mary Baker Eddy sums up: “When Life is really gained outside of matter, it is understood, in which case the belief that Life was ever in the body is gone and cannot be resurrected; our friends thus advanced are Spirit, that never rose from dust and can no more return to, or commune with matter than a blossom can return to its bud.”

Since all is Mind, what we call physical effects are purely mental ones. The immanent, the subjective world of Spirit (spiritual understanding), the inner light that is Love, is the objective manifestation, Mind, which, seen incorrectly, appears to be matter.

Mind is omnipresence. Science is the knowledge and under-

standing of things as they are; thus “Science understood, translates matter into Mind” (*Mis.* 25:12). The only illusory thing about matter is the fact that matter is not matter but Mind when correctly seen from a spiritual sense of things.

“Life is Mind [your Mind] the creator reflected in His [your Mind’s] creations” (S&H 331:5). “Mind [your Mind] is the grand creator” (S&H 143:26). Mind is the Life-Principle of all observable existence. Is this why Mrs. Eddy, touching Adam Dickey’s arm, said: “Adam, this is Spirit”? Was she trying to teach him that the three-dimensional world of matter in which we seem to function, actually functions in us, as us, as Mind, our Mind?

The physical scientists today speak of the whole subjective universe of matter and energy, atoms and stars as constructs of consciousness. More and more, physical scientists are becoming theologians, and are coming to understand that “Mind [your Mind] is its own great cause *and effect*” (*Mis.* 173:12).

Looking and thinking from a material point only, we never shall gain the *Science* of being. “The ever-present belief of existence in matter drops the standard of man in dust.” Jesus said: “Seek ye first the kingdom of God.” Seeking truth, life, substance or intelligence in the three-dimensional world of matter, we find only sorrow and death. But looking into Mind for life, truth, intelligence, substance, we find them right at hand *in what looks like matter*.

Statements from the First Edition, Chapter III

On page 151 of the first edition of *Science and Health*, in Chapter III, “Spirit and Matter,” Mary Baker Eddy admonishes, “The less we admit matter intelligent, and cease to call the body “I,” the more we gather ourself in the good...and the sooner will God [infinite good, our own real Mind] be understood, and man will be found to be the image and likeness of God,” because we have married our Mind to God—have, like Jesus, “*MADE [OURSELF] THE SON OF GOD.*”

On page 153 of the first edition Mrs. Eddy reminds us, “If you possess Love, Wisdom, or Truth, you have Life that is superior

to death, sickness, or sin, and you ought to prove this fact by demonstration.” On page 154 she continues, “As a man *understandeth*, so is he in Truth....The signs of today point to the era when all that really is, will be *understood* Spirit and its phenomena.”

Our Leader knew that Science will ultimately triumph, but as her great revelation was met with cruel persecution and ridicule, she acknowledged, on page 155: “Today echoes back the cry of by-gone centuries: ‘*Crucify him that maketh himself as God,*’ Spirit, and let matter have dominion over man.” Do we today “let matter have dominion over man” by our belief that the sex creation is other than a veil that hides Truth and real Life from us; and so crucifies the Christ, or Truth?

Page 155 continues: “Jesus understood...he was Spirit....When we possess a true sense of our oneness with God, and learn *we are Spirit alone*, and not matter...we will triumph over all sickness, sin, and death, thus proving our God-being. That *we are Spirit, [understanding] and Spirit is God [your real Mind], is undeniably true.*”

“The belief that Life and intelligence blend with matter is the foundation of all misapprehensions of God and man; and we *SHALL PROVE WE ARE SPIRIT* that mixes not with matter” (page 156).

On page 158-9 we read: “You possess your own body and make it harmonious and immortal, or discordant and mortal. You, the Intelligence [Mind], embrace the body in comprehension and completeness; put away then the error of belief that matter embraces you in mystery and disease; ‘*you, the Soul and circumference of being,* (for the body is but the idea of ‘you,’) are a law to your members....”

Elsewhere Mary Baker Eddy states: “The real relation between Soul and body reveals body without sensation or intelligence. To understand this opens to view the capabilities of being.”

Page 169 explains: “*We are Soul, Spirit,* and not matter; and it is quite as impossible to be both as to serve God and mammon....But the world slumbers [as error flexes its muscles and the unreconstructed dinosaur of hierarchical ecclesiasticism holds sway; but through the teachings of the Second Coming of the Christ, it is a disappearing breed]. When will the waking be?...Sooner or later all will feel the need of this

Truth....*AWAY WITH THE BELIEF THAT SOMETHING OUTSIDE OF HIMSELF, OVER WHICH HE HAS NO CONTROL*, makes man sick and a sinner.” (page 174). We need daily to jump-start our understanding in order to get better spiritual mileage. “To guard and govern the action of mind, enables you to hold the body in subjection.”

Page 185 of the first edition poses the question, “Do you lose happiness or caste by finding yourself Soul [God, spiritual sense, spiritual understanding, true identity] instead of [mortal] sense?” Then Mrs. Eddy explains, “[In reality] there is no personality; being is Spirit...We find no diminution of happiness in learning *WE ARE SPIRIT* [God] and not matter; *SOUL* and not body, but a vast increase of all that elevates, purifies, and blesses man.”

Ignorance of what we really *ARE* alone hides this great divine truth from us. Diseases are beliefs, which when ruled out of mind are ruled out of the body. On page 194, we read: “Mortal man is but a dream; even the belief that Life, sensation and substance are matter, all of which the ultimatum of being proves illusion.

“The different phases of error, or mortal belief, are the conception, birth, and death of man and matter, together with the pleasure, pain, sickness and sin of personal sense.”

Page 207 of the first edition points the way out of error: “To understand that Spirit and its immortal idea, the universe and man, are all that is real, is the kingdom or reign of harmony that is to come [the kingdom within our consciousness that is the only reality of Life or substance, and is perfect understanding].”

First Edition’s Chapter IV

In “Creation,” Chapter IV of the first edition of Science and Health, on page 222, we are again reminded that “we cannot fail to see material man does not reflect Spirit, nor the finite the Infinite; therefore material and finite man is not the image and reflex shadow of God [of the kingdom of heaven within your consciousness]. Intelligence [Mind] is Substance [Spirit], and nothing can hold or embrace Intelligence, because it embraces in itself all things. Soul [God,

your true identity, spiritual understanding] is outside of matter, and not a person, but Principle....” Knowing we are Soul (God), and not sense, she says, is the Truth that destroys sickness, sin, and death.

The reader should heed and pay careful attention to Mrs. Eddy’s next statement: “The compound idea named man is unintelligent. It is a lifeless image and reflection of Principle, or Soul [God, Mind, that you, in reality, are and] which is the Life, Intelligence, and Substance of this idea....all have but one Soul [one divine identity or spiritual understanding], and *SHOULD RECOGNIZE THEMSELVES SOUL [GOD]....*”

We have now come to the crux of the first edition (page 223): “When realizing Life as it is, namely, Soul [God, true identity, spiritual understanding], not sense, or the personal man, *we shall expand into Truth and self-completeness that embrace all things, and need communion with nothing more than itself, to find them all.* [We will understand [this statement] only in proportion as we lay up our treasures in heaven; and not on earth, that is, in Spirit, and not matter....Constantly looking away from the body to the good and true, we shall gravitate towards Spirit and immortality.”

As the last edition tells us, on page 258:13, “God [your own real Mind] expresses in man the infinite idea forever developing itself, broadening and rising higher and higher from a boundless basis.”

“We Are Spirit”

On page 225 of the first edition of Science and Health we read, “*WE ARE SPIRIT [MIND, GOD]*; Spirit being characterized as *understanding*], but, knowing this not, we go on to vainly suppose ourself body, and not Soul [God]....The immortal is not within the mortal, nor Life in death. This belief has hidden the glorious Truth of man’s being, and turned him away from his original selfhood [his true Christ identity as Soul, spiritual understanding, God]....Joint heirs with God are the partakers of an inheritance where there is no division of estate.”

The first edition, page 227, directs us: “Let go the belief you

live in matter, and you will grow...personality will be swallowed up in the *boundless Love that shadows forth man*....This is not losing man nor robbing God, but *FINDING YOURSELF MORE BLESSED AS PRINCIPLE THAN PERSON, AS GOD THAN MAN, AS SOUL THAN SENSE*, and yourself and neighbor one."

"Principle [your Mind] and its idea is one, and this one is God...and His reflection is man and the universe" (S&H 465:17-1). "As a drop of water is one with the ocean, a ray of light one with the sun, even so God [your real Mind] and man [your Mind's reflection] Father and son, are one in being.... For in Him we live and move, and have our being" (S&H 361:16-20).

"*God is individual Mind* [your Mind]. This one Mind and His individuality comprise the elements of all forms and individualities, and prophesy the nature and stature of Christ, the ideal man" (*Mis.* 101:31). Page 229 of the first edition states: "...Man epitomizes the universe, and is the *body* of God..." Generic man is God. There is an inseparable oneness between Mind and its expression, its *body*, its reflection.

Page 235 promises: "When immortality is better understood, there will follow an exercise of capacity unknown to mortals; man will become a hundred fold more a man, when he holds himself in the Science of being, starting from the basis of Spirit....To gain the right interpretation [of the Genesis statement, "let us make man in our image and likeness"] is to admit the 'Us' referred to Life, Truth and Love [which Mrs. Eddy tells us we will be when we understand them].... 'Let *them* have dominion,' also signified plurality, for man was the *generic* name of mankind, in contradistinction to the belief that God made one man, and man made the rest of his kind. Science reveals the fact that [infinite good] made all [and shadowed it forth as its own image and likeness]."

Explaining this image and likeness the first edition says, on page 236: "Gender is embraced in Spirit [Mind], else God could never have shadowed forth from out [of] Himself, the idea of male and female [as one—man as having the qualities of *BOTH* male and female]..." Page 237 adds: "...and nothing was left for man or for mat-

ter to create after Spirit had created all.... Then to conclude in the face of this infinite logic, that an egg is the starting point of Life,...is to forget this is mythical, and a belief that usurped the prerogative of understanding, starting an Adam from dust, calling itself Life in matter, and resulting in mortality, the very opposite of Truth.”

St. Paul also saw this and wrote: “...let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh...” (II Cor. 7:1). Of course this scientific truth cannot be forced upon mankind. Spiritual growth must precede its adoption, as Mrs. Eddy in her chapter “Wedlock,” (*Miscellaneous Writings*, page 286) makes clear.

Because Paul openly preached asceticism and sexual abstinence (even though he tempered it with “To avoid fornication let every man have his own wife”) he was imprisoned, tortured, and finally beheaded by Nero, circa AD 67. Mrs. Eddy wisely avoided such a fate for herself and others, by *gradually* leading into sexual abstinence.

“Man originated in God; he is the product of Spirit; hence, he is idea and not Substance,* even the body of Soul. Be strong in refusing to admit a mortal sense of body. In reality you do not have a mortal body. There is only one body—divine Principle embodying itself as the Christ-consciousness; [man’s] Intelligence is Spirit, [understanding], not brains....God [your own real Mind] was and is; and man was and is [your Mind’s] reflex shadow” (First edition, page 238).

“Science says that man has neither birth, growth, decay nor death; man is idea and not Substance, and [is] spiritual instead of material...” (First edition, page 242).

Our divine name is “Christ Science.” (See *Mis.* 167:14.) In Science we learn there is only one man, existing as the full representation of Mind, without having to be created. A mortal body is a misconception, hypnotic suggestion. Life was never infused into matter and therefore cannot leave it. (See S&H 91:25-92:8.)

Mark Twain turned the erroneous announcement of his death

*In the first edition Mrs. Eddy capitalized “substance” and “intelligence.”

into a well-known quip. More difficult was the situation of the obscure man whose death was mistakenly announced in his local paper. The “corpse” hastened to the editor to protest. “I’m awfully sorry,” the editor replied. “It’s too late to do much about it. The best thing I can do for you is to put you in the ‘Birth Column’ tomorrow morning and give you a fresh start.”

We all need to get a fresh start. And we will, for Christ, the truth of Life, always gives us enough to begin with, when we are ready to serve God, our real Mind. The impulsion of Life makes Mind produce an idea (Life), that is a *right* idea (Truth), and that exactly meets the need (salvation), and is perfect (Love).

“Adam was the belief of Life in matter” (First edition, page 245). “Life, Truth and Love [which Mrs. Eddy informs us we are when we understand them] never made inharmonious man” (page 246).

“Whatever germinates after the manner of matter, will meet the fate of error, namely, sickness, sin and death, until every vestige of this belief is self-destroyed, and *man understood shadow* and not Substance, whose only Life or Intelligence [Mind] is God” (page 253).

“Understanding Life exempt from mortality, and no sensation, or Intelligence in the body, is the ultimatum...” (page 256). Seeing, hearing, feeling, tasting, smelling are Mind faculties. Man is the shadowing forth of the Principle (Love) that you, in reality, are. Spirit and matter are the wheat and the tares, growing side by side until, through spiritual growth, belief in matter goes the way of the buggy whip and the milkman, and we learn that God is our only real being.

A comment about a film said: “Several tons of dynamite are set off in this picture—none of it under the right people.” We need to set off “several tons of mental dynamite” under the tares, our belief in matter.

On any journey we won’t make much progress unless we can keep our footing. To make spiritual progress we need to exercise divine balance. A notice in a saloon stated: “Not responsible for loss of hats, coats or equilibrium.” We have spiritual equilibrium if, when weighed in the balance of God, we gain a balance on the side of

good. Then only the divine Mind, our real Mind, demonstrates itself. “Having *one God, one Mind*, unfolds the power that heals the sick” (S&H 276:1). Whose Mind unfolds the power? Your real Mind, here and now.

Life Embraces Neither Sensuous Formations Nor Conditions of Matter

Christian Science teaches these foundation truths: the reality and allness of infinite good and the unreality and nothingness of matter; the spirituality of man and the universe; the omnipotence of good; and the impotence of evil. How do we reach full understanding of these facts?

On page 261 of the first edition we learn what birth really is: “Every agony of mortal man wafts him onward over the billows until error is finally destroyed.... This is the new birth, the travail of error before it is self-destroyed, and man is born of Spirit and not matter.”

In the 1910 edition, page 574:27, Mary Baker Eddy comforts us with: “The very circumstance which your suffering sense deems wrathful and afflictive, Love can make an angel entertained unawares. Then thought gently whispers: ‘Come hither! Arise from your false consciousness into the true sense of Love, and behold the Lamb’s wife,—Love wedded to its own spiritual idea.’ Then cometh the marriage feast, for this revelation will destroy forever the physical plagues imposed by material sense.”

On page 262 of the first edition, Mrs. Eddy notes: “...history is greatly indebted to [Prof. Agassiz for] his labors and genius, for facts relating to the belief of Life in matter. His discoveries brought to light important points in what is termed embryonic life; the butterfly, bee, etc., propagating their species without the male element; and this corroborates Science, proving plainly that the origin of the universe and man depends not on material conditions.”

On page 275 of the first edition, Mrs. Eddy writes: “The domestic economy of the bee, and its method of multiplying, foreshad-

ows the understanding of being yet to come. That *mind produces mind*, and our beliefs of matter reproduce beliefs only....is the Science of being. Again we state, all is Mind [and never forget it is your real Mind]; there is no matter, and this needs only to be understood to establish harmony perpetual....In sleep, [dreams are] cause and effects [and] beliefs only, that which seems, and not that which really is." Note carefully Mrs. Eddy's next statement.

"The spiritual understanding of Life embraces neither sensuous formations nor conditions of matter," she tells us on page 262-263, "All that has a beginning has an end; what we name life germinating in an egg and expanding thence to adult being, will finally go out, proving it never was Life, and nothing, in fact, but a belief of Life, and this belief, mesmerism and not man....

"[Agassiz] proved clearly the origin of mortal man to be matter, and not Spirit; the product of an egg, instead of God, and that a *belief* of structural life is the sole progenitor of what is termed mortal man; even as Truth is the origin of immortal man and the universe....When it is learned that *God [Mind] is our Life* man will be immortal, sinless and perfect."

As proof that "Life embraces neither sensuous formations nor conditions of matter," Mary Baker Eddy's writings refer often to the virginity of Jesus' mother. In fact, "*The virginity of Jesus' mother is a cardinal point of Christian Science*" (D.C.C., page 108).

On page 268 the first edition says: "A consciousness of Truth, Life, and Love is Soul [true identity, spiritual understanding], not body...." Any hypothesis of birth—when the wool was pulled over our eyes, with death its outcome—is unworthy Intelligence. What is real is eternal without beginning or end, just as the idea $2 \times 2 = 4$ has no beginning nor end. Life is Mind, and Mind is Spirit, infinite good, which is the only true identity (Soul). These three, Mind, Spirit, Soul, as one, constitute our Principle which expresses itself as Life, Truth and Love.

"If you contradict sense with Science and abide by the rules of the latter, you will demonstrate harmony, and prove your position

the right one....

“When we ask earnestly and strive for health to be useful...why does He withhold it? These are unanswerable questions...until we learn God is not person, but Principle, and that we must understand this Principle, to direct our being in harmony with it. Then shall we be able to govern the physical and mental. *All depends on Mind* “ (First edition, page 273).

“*Knowing we are Intelligence [Mind], and not intelligent matter; Soul [God, spiritual understanding] and not sense, is the Truth that destroys all sickness, sin, and death. Once perceiving the mental hallucination that embitters existence, we shall unmake what mind has made*” (First edition, page 274).

Our whole salvation is to see ourselves as God-beings, ageless, deathless, never born into matter. A friend said, “To belief I am 90, but if anything needs to be done, I am 35.” To think of the age of anyone is to put him in the dream of mortal birth and death. Advancing years should bring increased usefulness, vigor, energy, ability as we realize the Biblical truth that “there shall be time no longer.” Mrs. Eddy emphasized: “Expecting an increase of usefulness and vigor from advancing years with as much faith as you look for decrepitude and ugliness, a favorable result would be sure to follow.” In *Miscellany*, page 235:19, she asks: “Is mortal man a creator? [No.]...Then why this meaningless commemoration of birthdays, since there are none.”

Birth and death are unknown to man as God’s (your Mind’s) expression. As St. Paul says, you are the “house built without hands. You have the Mind of Christ.” You are Mind’s fullness. You are the “chosen” people, those who *understand* man to be the full manifestation, “the full representation of Mind” (S&H 591:6).

“Had we the understanding of our God-being or the omnipotence of Truth, we should have no fear of matter, and having none, our bodies would become harmonious and immortal; a belief of Substance-matter would then give place to the understanding of Substance-Spirit, for the spiritual body is the only real one, and [is as] *tangible as the material* ” (First edition, page 275).

Understanding What Is Written

The first edition, on page 278, promises: “If our readers understand what is written in this book, they will be able to prove to themselves, it reproduces, however faintly, the same proofs Jesus and the disciples gave, over eighteen hundred years ago. Shall it not then be accepted...‘for the work’s sake?’ Every new idea of Truth, that comes out from the infinite Spirit [understanding] and touches the ragged shores of belief, has been met with derision and chains, scourged out of the synagogues at first, but afterwards pardoned and received.”

On page 277 we are told: “There is no mortal man; the sleep of Adam [that we seem to be in] was what today we term mesmerism [hypnotism, illusion, animal magnetism], in which *BELIEF* creates, and controls all it creates....hence we learn all material things are formed by mind....A mortal body is but a belief of Life in matter, and controlled by this belief.”

“The belief that Life and Intelligence [Mind] belong to the body, is the source of all wrong-thinking, and wrong-acting; it takes away from Soul [true identity] and gives to sense, and is the fountain of sickness, sin, and death [This is why Jesus and Mary Baker Eddy came to teach us that human birth is death to spiritual existence, and is the last enemy to be destroyed.] *ALL FORMATIONS ARE SHADOWS OF BEING, AND WE THEIR SOUL AND SUBSTANCE....* ‘I am the resurrection and Life,’ are the words of him who spake as never man spake....But taking an old belief by the throat...is no small task....[nevertheless] *THE BODY IS GOVERNED BY MIND*, notwithstanding our *utter ignorance* of this, and our involuntary submission to error” (First edition, page 280).

Because of our “utter ignorance” and “involuntary submission” to error, titanic battles must be fought with “personal sense.” We must stand up to this bully, this animal magnetism which is illusion. The single-minded drive that fuels our steep ascent up the spiritual ladder must not flag.

First Edition's Chapter V

On page 294, in the first edition's Chapter V, which is entitled "Prayer and Atonement," Mrs. Eddy makes it clear that "we are not Soul, Life, Love and Truth" *if we are sensibly with the body*, and regard omnipotence as a person whose ear we would gain. We are Soul, Life, Love and Truth only when we are absent from the body and present with the Lord, our true Mind. "Sorrow is turned into joy when we become conscious Soul (true identity), able to govern the body with Life, Truth, and Love; hence those words of our Master, 'I and the Father [the Mind that is Love] are one'" (First edition page 284). "Greater works than I [in the flesh ye can] do, because I go unto my Father [because I know my Mind is God, infinite good]" (John 14:12).

"Error will continue seven thousand years from the time of Adam, its origin. At the expiration of this period Truth will be generally comprehended, and Science [will have] rolled back the darkness that now hides the eternal sunshine and lift the curtain on Paradise, where earth produces at the command of Intelligence, and Soul [spiritual understanding] instead of sense, governs man" (First edition, page 282).

When Dante entered Paradise, he saw "the smile of the universe." When we demonstratively realize that in reality our own Mind is God, we too will see "the smile of the universe."

On page 303 of the first edition, we read: "Christ and God are words synonymous. Christ signifies the Soul and Principle of the man, Jesus." Christ also signifies the Soul and Principle of *you*, when you understand that *you are Principle*, constituted of Mind, Spirit, Soul, which expresses itself as Life, Truth, and Love.

On p. 305 Mrs. Eddy writes: "[Christ Jesus'] marvelous works are readily accounted for when we remember Christ is God, and that Jesus held all that he was, God, and wrought from the standpoint of his God-being, and this is the Science of being [that points to our marriage to God—our wholeness and present spiritual perfection.]"

"[But] to conclude persecution for righteousness sake belongs

to the past...is to mistake [Christianity's] very nature. ...the trials of prophet, disciple, apostle...await in some form, the pioneer of Truth."

Mrs. Eddy met the hatred directed toward her with divine Love. Elizabeth Earl Jones tells of an instance of this Love. A man obsessed with a diabolical, insane hatred towards Mrs. Eddy, found himself in Concord in the summer of 1900. Being in her neighborhood he decided to stand outside her driveway and get a look at this woman, as she came out for her daily drive. As Mrs. Eddy's carriage came toward him, she greeted him with a gentle bow, as she looked into his eyes with that "searching, lingering look that we all know," recalls Miss Jones. The man told Miss Jones that in that moment he felt all baptized in Love, such a Love as he had never felt before, and could not have believed possible. It was not of earth, but of heaven. Much to his own surprise, he suddenly crumpled up, sank to his knees, and wept like a child. After leaving Mrs. Eddy he went back to town, bought a Science and Health, and was healed of a disease.

Whatever our difficulties, divine Love will lift us up, heal and defend us. Mary Baker Eddy promises "defenses impregnable" for the Godlike (*Mis.* 10:10). The apocryphal writings tell the gripping story of Thecla, a disciple of St. Paul, whose victory in maintaining her virginity is unsurpassed in human history. When flames surrounded her as she was bound to the stake she miraculously escaped; she emerged unscathed when thrown to hungry wild beasts in the arena; and in her 90th year she again demonstrated "defenses impregnable" when an opening in a great rock enabled her to escape from wicked men, bent on debauching this sentinel of purity. The "impenetrable defense" that protected Thecla is available to us all when we steadfastly tread the path of our marriage to infinite good.

My dear Students,

Love is a mighty spiritual force
Mary B. Eddy

CHAPTER VIII

PRIVATE TEACHINGS ON MARRIAGE

Manna for the Spiritually Hungry

Thus far we have explored some of the basic teachings of the first five chapters of the first edition as they relate to the divine versus the human marriage. We have also briefly examined the first edition's Chapter VI, "Marriage," which softens Mary Baker Eddy's high teachings about spiritual purity so that faltering mortals can begin to work toward their true divine being, starting from the place wherein they find themselves.

Most Christian Scientists are already thoroughly familiar with the gentle promptings in this "suffer it to be so now" chapter. They may not be aware of other more forceful and difficult teachings which our Leader reserved for her more advanced students. The following sacred statements, culled from the Red and Blue books (*Essays* and *Collectanea*) and from *Fragments* and other sources, present some of Mary Baker Eddy's private teaching on the subject of "Marriage." They are offered here for those prepared to receive them, for humble students, the spiritually hungry, who can take them to God for unfoldment. It is hoped that the readers of this book will find comfort and strength in these deeper, often heretofore hidden, spiritual treasures.

"Marriage and Progeny"

In *Essays and Other Footprints (E.O.F.)*, sometimes referred to as the "Red Book," there is an article titled: "Marriage and Progeny." Here Mrs. Eddy makes a forthright statement:

"We learn from Scripture that God made all that was made

and He made it good. Therefore He made all that is real and eternal. Then nothing really exists that is unlike God and is not the reflection of positive good unmixed with evil. "Does Spirit fraternize with the flesh? Is man a creator? Is lust divine? Are life, substance and intelligence in matter?"

"If regeneration [new birth, transformation] signifies spiritual resurrection from the flesh, one cannot be led to the bridal altar with the expectation of surrendering to the flesh and sincerely pray, 'lead us not into temptation.' We read in the Scripture, 'Jesus answering said unto them, The children of this world marry, and are given in marriage: But they which shall be accounted worthy to obtain that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage' (Luke XX:34, 35)."

Such words cannot be dismissed lightly: "Take away the spiritual signification of Scripture, and that compilation can do no more for mortals than moonbeams to melt a river of ice" (S&H 241:14). Our Master taught his followers explicitly to "call no man your father upon the earth; for one is your Father, which is in heaven" (Matt. 23:9). If we are listening to the Word of God, we can't just let what Jesus said go in one ear and out the other. If what Jesus said is true, not one of us is trapped in matter; but we have to learn what we *ARE* in reality, and stop sinning. Remember when Laura Sargent asked Mrs. Eddy, "Mother, what do you mean by sin, sin, sin?" Mrs. Eddy said: "I mean the connubial relation."

"Marriage and Progeny" continues: "Dear Reader: These momentous questions and considerations I cannot answer or settle for you. God alone can and will do this and enlighten your understanding as to the true Scriptural import. The Bible and Science will some time solve for each and every mortal this earthly problem of *Marriage and Progeny*."

"Of this I am at present certain, that if marriage does increase a temptation to depart from Christ's teachings, it is not the union which Jesus sanctioned when he said, 'What therefore God hath joined together [male and female qualities as one; Principle and its idea, as one] let not man put asunder' (Matt. XIX:6)....our Master assured us

that they whom Spirit unites spiritually—for Spirit cannot unite materially—cannot be separated.”

Elsewhere (*E.O.F.* page 23), Mrs. Eddy says: “Jesus’ mission on earth was to show, by demonstration, that there is no corporeal personality, no sickness, no sin, no death... This Science teaches that there is absolutely no such thing as physical personality. The incarnation (or fleshly environment) of Jesus was intended to illustrate the process by which physicality (or so-called material personality) is *diminished*—that proportionately as mortal mind is spiritualized, physical personality *decreases*, until it finally disappears, as Jesus vanished in the ascension.

“Jesus’ work was individual, and can never be repeated. His reappearing must be impersonal [as in Science and Health]. His second coming must be as an idea, not as corporeality. He must present not mind as incarnated in matter, or Soul as circled in the flesh, but a realization of Life, Truth, and Love in their spiritual signification, as set forth in the Scriptures and in Science and Health.

“The Saviour proved that his growth was a progress upward and out of corporeality, into Spirit, not a retrogression downward, into the flesh [as is human birth, the result of lust and “brute instinct” (S&H 63:7) the last enemy to be destroyed].

“...What will be developed through Christian Science, and is now unfolding itself, is the purer idea and spiritual manifestation of the *CHRIST CHARACTER* in word and deed.” Our work is to lay down the human and mortal sense of persons and things. Jesus proved that the belief of any possible life, substance, and intelligence in or of matter is an illusion, hypnotic suggestion only. “The world of mortal mind is the unreal realm,” the Adam dream.

Again in *Essays and Other Footprints*, on pages 44 & 45, Mrs. Eddy writes: “God [infinite good] is All-in-all. [This is the one thought that must be held to above all else.] He [infinite good] is masculine, feminine, neuter. He [our real Mind] is the Father and Mother of the universe. What need, then, of procreation or sex, since God is the only creator, and all is made that can be made quite unconsciously of sex or gender?...God [infinite good] made them male

and female [God made each one both male and female, one] from the beginning; and they were in His [infinite good's] image and likeness—not images, but *image*. In the divine Mind there is no sex, no sexuality, and no procreation; the infinite Mind includes all in Mind....[The] departure from Truth began with the words sex, sexuality, sensuousness, matter; and these are the objective state of what is called mind separated from God, the one Mind.” Do we believe this? Jesus loved little children because they were free of sex beliefs. (At least in his day.)

Continuing (*E.O.F.* page 46): “Christian Scientists cannot afford to drop their weight into the scale of evil on this topic, or on any other that conflicts with one God, one Mind, the Sermon on the Mount, and the recognition that woman is not least because last at the cross and first at the sepulchre—the last to linger in tender ministrations of love, and the first to discern the *Christ idea*—the life that is everlasting, that knows no pain, no death, no severance from Love—that burst the tomb, victorious over the grave, sin, disease, and death.”

Manifesting Divine Completeness

Sex is a belief of incompleteness, of needing something from the outside. Mrs. Eddy tells us that the knowing of our divine completeness counteracts sex because we are the expression of Truth (our Father-Mother God). *D.C.C.*, page 285, explains: “The treatment, Love is All, will make the person treated mentally strong and confident, and without fear. Love is All, will destroy lust or sex desires, as sex is lack of mental confidence.” All mankind will be satisfied when they awake in infinite good's likeness.

Marriage, we learn in Science, is *understanding* of this divine completeness; hence the joy of *divine* marriage. You are both bride and bridegroom. All the qualities of both bride and bridegroom are included in your being. You do not need a person, or anything else from outside. What seems to be an outside thing or person, is in reality a divine idea, and is already and forever included in your own true being.

In this spiritual acknowledgment the picture will conform to what you already are—spiritual satisfaction. (See Mrs. Eddy’s Poem, “Satisfied.”) The inclusion of bride and bridegroom *QUALITIES* is the only marriage there is. Intelligence is the primal and eternal quality of your real Mind, of the triune Principle—Life, Truth, and Love—that *you, in reality, ARE*, and it includes all satisfaction.

Any problem is always the misconception of the spiritual fact. Being is unalterably *ONE*. God and man (your Mind and its idea) are two different aspects of the same being—the cause aspect and the effect aspect. Let’s acknowledge this sublime and glorious sense of being in which cause is being effect.

Fragments, page 151, reminds us “Jesus said, ‘Spirit hath *not* flesh and blood as *ye* see me have.’” On page 163 we read: “One needs to protect himself from his own false beliefs alone. The only wrong thinker, or mental mal-practitioner there is or can be is one’s self. The beam in one’s own eye is the whole of evil....” On page 177, Mrs. Eddy instructs: “*I HEAL YOU BECAUSE I HEAL MY-SELF.*” She knew that “There is one infinite God and one infinite man expressing that God” (*Fragments*, 178) and counseled: “Read often, James I: 21-27.”

Fragments, page 181, asks: “Do you feel your evil is more than another’s? Take two balloons, one with 80,000 feet of gas, and another a toy one. A knife into each will fix both in the same way, and with one application.”

“Our understanding of Christian Science is God working with us.” We can all heal once we get self out of the way. Mrs. Eddy often said, “I got Mary out of the way.” See the spirituality of your patients. A single wrong thought harbored makes one a partner with animal magnetism, evil. Expecting people to be better than they are helps them to become better.

Mrs. Eddy has taught us to know that our treatment, our declaration, is the only power, the only presence, the only law, the only action, the only thought in the case. “In Science, Mind is *ONE*, including noumenon and phenomena, God [the Principle that you are] and His thoughts” (S&H 114:10). Since we are the Principle that is

Mind, we are Mind's fullness of understanding, Mind's full manifestation. "God (our own real Mind) expresses in man the infinite idea forever developing itself, broadening and rising higher and higher from a boundless basis" (S&H 258:13). The important thing in this world is not so much where we are standing but in what direction we are moving.

Overcoming Heredity

In her early teaching, called "The Science of Man," Mrs. Eddy explained, "...you may have a sick child, and the first argument is to say, 'this child is not sick,' but is a belief of its parents and that belief embraced all this error, called sickness. You can readily understand it has no hereditary disease, because matter cannot make its own conditions. You may call a child an hereditary error, for such it is, and just in the ratio that you can argue down this little error, will the child and the man of Science, the body that is harmonious, appear. *THE FIRST ERROR OF THIS CHILD IS THAT MAN CREATED IT, AND THAT LIFE IS HERE IN THE FORM OF MORTALITY. HIS BIRTH, EXISTENCE, AND DEATH, IS ALL AN ILLUSION*, and is the opposite of truth; it [has] nothing to do with man, it is the opposite of man...." (*Essays & Other Footprints*, page 184). We are all destined to learn this, even if it takes a thousand years.

What looks like human birth is merely hypnotic suggestion, the Adam dream. To overcome a so-called hereditary disease, we have to know that man, the patient, was never in a matter body because he is the image and likeness of Spirit, that he was never born into matter, never passed through a prenatal state, never was thrust out of Spirit (understanding), never had a material father and mother or ancestor from whom he could inherit disease—that belief was all misconception.

"Into the real and ideal man the fleshly element cannot enter. Thus it is that Christ illustrates the coincidence or spiritual agreement between God and man in His image" (S&H 332:31).

"Sickness or sensation in matter is not a reality but is an illu-

sion,” Mrs. Eddy tells us. “The sick have only to awaken from the dream of life in matter, of pain and disease in matter—yea, of sensation in matter that you call personal sense—to realize themselves well.” *D.C.C.* page 220 advises: “Mentally treat yourself that nothing can govern your actions or come to your thought that is not from the divine Mind. Be strong there.”

In *Essays & Other Footprints*, on page 2, Mrs. Eddy explains: “Men and women have never multiplied. There was never a birth nor a death of man, since man is the idea inseparable from his divine Principle which exists and co-exists with God.” She is stressing the great spiritual truth that our only Father and Mother is *Truth*, a synonym for God. “Therefore, *THE OFFSPRING OF THE FLESH, BORN OF A WOMAN, IS NO MORE REAL, SCIENTIFIC OR ETERNAL, THAN A TUMOR*, which the Christian Scientist labors to destroy and so heal the sick.”

Science and Health (page 252:15) tells us “The false evidence of material sense contrasts strikingly with the testimony of Spirit [of what you really *are*]. Material sense lifts its voice with the arrogance of reality, [but it is a lie]....Spirit [what you are, in reality]...saith: I am Spirit. Man, whose senses are spiritual, is my likeness. He reflects the infinite understanding, for I am Infinity....I am supreme and give all, for I am Mind.” Whose Mind is she talking about here? *Your real Mind.*

“In Science, body is the servant of [your real] Mind, not its master: Mind [your Mind] is supreme. Science [Truth] reverses the evidence of the material sense with the spiritual sense that God, Spirit [that which you *really are*] is the only substance; and that man, [Spirit’s] image and likeness, is spiritual, not material. This great truth...substantiates man’s identity,—together with his immortality and preexistence, or his coexistence with his Maker [your real Mind]. That which has a beginning must have an ending” (*Mis.* 47:17).

Mortals will lose their sense of mortality in proportion as they gain the sense of man’s spiritual preexistence as God’s child. Recall Jesus’ prayer in Gethsemane, “O Father, give me the glory I had with Thee before the world was—[before this dream of life in matter over-

took me]” “The meek Nazarene’s steadfast and true knowledge of preexistence, of the nature and inseparability of God and man,—made him mighty” (*Mis.* 189:8).

At this point we are seeing the mortal body as a misconception; but “he who gains the God-crowned summit of Christian Science never abuses the corporeal personality but uplifts it. He thinks of everyone in his real quality, and sees each mortal in an impersonal depict” (*Ret.* 76:23).

It is heartening to know that “an improved belief cannot retrograde. When Christ [your real Mind] changes a belief of sin or of sickness into a better belief, then belief melts into spiritual understanding” (S&H 442:19). What disappears is that which was always nothing, namely a matter body. The matter body, which was always nothing, disappears, and man, being your real Mind’s reflection, is found immortal now.

A fundamental point in Christian Science is *never to admit the existence of a matter body and a human mind; they are misperception, illusion, hypnotic suggestion only*. Matter in any form is nothing more than a misinterpretation, a misconception of Spirit.

Born of the Spirit

On page 5, *E.O.F.*, Mrs. Eddy tells us: “The existence of Jesus was identical with Truth and the Life that is God [because he claimed and manifested the Christ Mind, which we too must do]. He demonstrated Spirit [the understanding that Mind is the only substance] free from matter. The divine Soul [spiritual understanding, changeless spiritual sense, true identity] is the substance of man; and body is but its accompanying shadow; and this eternal substance [Spirit] never in its body or shadow [anymore than you can get into your shadow]. He knew that even as good and evil are opposites, so are the spiritual and material sense of things opposites.

“The material senses declare matter substance, and Spirit shadow, while the spiritual sense of things reverses this statement, and finds the only permanent and eternal side of things the thoughts

[of your real Mind alone] that beget them.

“To understand this great fact in metaphysics, it is necessary to be born again; *born of the Spirit and not of the flesh*; and this was the birth referred to in those words of the prophet Isaiah, ‘For unto us a child is born [*born of the Spirit*] and the government shall be upon his shoulder, and his name shall be called Wonderful’....

“Great epochs begin with the birth of new ideas [and the greatest epoch of all began with Mary Baker Eddy’s revelation that evil is unreal]. When we enlarge our idea of [infinite good], it becomes more divine and less human, and this more spiritual conception of being has birth in higher individuality [as we wed ourself to God]. But the highest finite sense of goodness is but a feeble conception of infinite Love. In fine, it is but a babe born meekly because of its surroundings, clothed with worldliness, sin and self, as when Columbus gave birth to his conceptions of this globe. Whoever utters an impregnable Principle, turns the fortunes of the race gradually into a higher channel by the mild pressure of Truth.”

E.O.F. page 6 says: “It is the great conceptions of meek and noiseless birth, not the roaring effervescence, that change the existing state of things [and promote our marriage to God]....The most notable period of the ages was when a Galilean peasant uttered, by the wayside and in humble homes, to artless listeners, dull disciples, and to wondering ears, his simple sense of Truth, of how it healed the sick, saved the sinner and robbed the grave of its victory.

“He trusted those words to the providence of God, [and] in no fact seems the man of Galilee greater than in his serene sense of the immortality of those words: ‘Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away.’” Those “words” of Jesus prophesied and promised the “Comforter,” the “little book,” Science and Health. They prophesied to St. John the coming of the woman of the Apocalypse, who would bring the Second Coming of the Christ. And *THE WOMAN’S WORDS SHALL NOT PASS AWAY*, but shall bring health, wholeness, and harmony to humanity.

E.O.F. page 7 adds: “We ought to weary of that self that cannot fulfill more the powers of a higher destiny [a self that refuses

to ‘study and learn’ that our own real Mind is God and has sovereign power]....Every right that is wrought out, however simple or grand, is a step toward harmony, the ultimate of being; yea, it is the birth of some higher idea of God, and unto us a child is born.”

On page 11, *E.O.F.*, Mrs. Eddy solemnly adjured, “The Book of Genesis has an importance to which no other document pretends. It is not only the oldest book that is trustworthy history but the only one that contains the clear concise statement of the supremacy of Spirit over matter as when the eternal Us said, ‘Let Us make man and let Us make him in the image and likeness of Spirit’ (not matter). The spiritual origin and support of the universe and man is their only real origin, subsistence and ultimate. Therefore the entity or ego of man is Spirit, and man is but the idea of himself *and HIMSELF IS GOD of which man is the reflex shadow*. Not that man is God, but man is the image and likeness of God [infinite good, your real Mind] and [man] should have no other mind but the divine Mind to govern and control this image and likeness or manifestation of God [your Mind].”

E.O.F. page 12 continues: “Now I mean that man is one of the pictures of God’s Mind [your Mind] and this picture is a product and not a producer; it is an image and reflection, the intelligence whereof is the Mind [your Mind] that produced it, and not that man is a separate mind from God, for then man would be a sinner, and sin would render man mortal. *The only possible way for man to be immortal is to have no separate Mind from God* [—to have ‘not a single quality underived from Deity’—] for then man is governed by an unerring Mind and this produces an undying body forever undisturbed by matter.”

Our real name is “Christ Science” (*Mis.* 167:15). As Science, we already include everything that can ever be revealed. Healing in Christian Science is the *clearing away of misconceptions* about God and man. It is knowing we already include every right idea about the misconception dropped on us by the veil of human birth.

“Don’t worry,” the steward reassured a seasick passenger, “Nobody ever died of seasickness.”

“How can you be so cruel,” moaned the sufferer. “Only the hope of death has kept me alive so far.”

People think death will make them harmonious. This is a misconception. Only by realizing that in Truth we already *ARE* harmonious can harmony be manifested.

E.O.F., page 13, tells us: “The cup of the man of sorrows [was necessary]...Because it separated man from the vain and empty lie of life in matter, uniting him to the joys of Soul [true identity, spiritual understanding], and those joys satisfied the immortal cravings; purity and Truth are the only sure foundations of bliss; without these all is lost...”

Woman’s Hour

Human marriage is based on the supposed incompleteness of male and female as separate genders, but the true divine marriage teaches us we were “made whole”—teaches us our wholeness in the oneness of Truth and Love in Mind. Woman in Mrs. Eddy’s writing typifies the female element in both man and women. This consciousness is the consciousness of Love, and transcends all fears and limitations.

In the article called “Woman’s Hour,” (*E.O.F.* page 18) Mrs. Eddy writes: “True history is the record of the development in the human consciousness of a *truer idea of God and man*. This development has expressed itself affirmatively throughout the ages in every department of human endeavor. Its true meaning and intent is interpreted in the search of the human heart for freedom. Freedom is an abstract thing, even an ideal in the divine Mind, which is God [and which is your real Mind]. Its ultimate goal brings ‘the liberty of the sons of God.’ Its message has come to the awakened thought of toiling, striving humanity in every age as the star of Bethlehem came to the awakened thought of the Wisemen of that day...”

“And God [your own real Mind]—the divine ever-present Love—made man in His own image and likeness. But the man of this world’s conception has passed by in his daily tasks oblivious to

the fact that Love has always been more truly expressed by woman than by the masculine representative of manhood.

“But now has come woman’s hour. [Note: Here ‘woman’ refers to qualities of thought, and in the human, many men have more qualities of womanhood than some women.] The deliverer of humanity must be the mother-love. It broods over the children of earth, though they, unconscious of its power, may term it weakness....In this world-wide ‘war of the Revolution,’ manhood shall be softened by the qualities of true womanhood, and womanhood shall be strengthened by the courage and assurance of manhood, and they two together shall reveal the true sense of Godhood [the true sense of your real Mind, your Godhood].”

Mrs. Eddy quotes C. A. L. Totten: “It was the creation of *womanhood* that completed the equation which even yet we have not fully solved.” She states, “His [Totten’s] prophecies are grounded in Science. They reiterate the sacred Scriptural records and the logical syllogisms in Science and Health where the demonstration of being starts with the manhood of being and rises to womanhood as the Christ idea....

“The messages to the human heart in this hour are stronger than creeds, broader than races, more potent than patriotism. They are the prophetic whispering of angels.”

Perhaps the coming of “woman’s hour,” that Mrs. Eddy foretells is foreshadowed in the way women all over the world are leaving the small ponds for deeper waters today. Globe-hopping women executives are seen everywhere. Women have persevered into an age when they can become anything: senators, governors, television news anchors, astronauts, and military generals. Women have become a major force in business and political life. Nobody cares if they are wearing trousers or skirts if they have demonstrated competence.

As we prepare to enter the twenty-first century, women are still opening doors once closed to them, still chipping away at inequities that relegated them to second-class citizenship, as was certainly the case in Mrs. Eddy’s day. Recently, women delegates from 185 nations conferred in China, promoting themselves as the harbin-

ger of women's empowerment. They see in their deliberations the dawn of an era in which men and women have equal rights, equal opportunities, and mutual respect.

But old habits and thinking patterns are deeply ingrained and die hard. If Mary Baker Eddy had been a man, would she have faced the terrible prejudice that dogged her, and that still persists to this day? Definitely not. Even so, as she noted: "The Science of physical harmony, as now presented to the people in divine light, is radical enough to promote as forcible collisions of thought as the age has strength to bear" (*Un.* 6:10). The fact that her age didn't have strength to bear the full revelation that each individual has both—has all the manhood and all the womanhood qualities—caused Mrs. Eddy to hide her great discovery in the pages of *Science and Health*.

Mrs. Eddy knew that time and teaching have a wonderful way of weeding out the trivial and untrue. Let's not let go of our longings and yearnings, our "immortal cravings"; they lead us onward to Christ. Tribulation may be our part, but as they say, if "nobody knows the trouble you've seen," you obviously don't live in a small town. Cheer up!

Jesus in his revelation to St. John on the lonely Isle of Patmos, to which St. John had been banished, "did not leave the ages comfortless. He saw the final readjustment of all things, and in the vision he saw symbolically the crown of power and revelation placed upon the head of womanhood" (*E.O.F.* page 19).

Gaining the Christ Character

E.O.F. page 23 says: "This Science teaches that there is absolutely no such thing as physical personality. [The infinite cannot be embodied in the finite.] ...the Saviour proved that his growth was a progress upward out of corporeality, into Spirit, not a retrogression downward, into the flesh."

So long as we believe ourselves to be a person, we limit ourselves. Infinite good never limits us. We in our ignorance limit ourselves. In *No and Yes*, 30:18, Mrs. Eddy states, "It is Truth's knowl-

edge of infinitude which forbids the genuine existence of even a claim to error. This knowledge is light wherein there is no darkness...revealing [infinite good] and nothing else.” This Truth, which you are in reality, “has no consciousness of error” ...because, “Dwelling in light, I can see only the brightness of My own glory” (*Un.* 18:4).

Every divine statement of absolute Christian Science in Science and Health confirms that we already are one with God. Our work is to acknowledge the “omnipresence of present perfection,” which is “the kingdom of God within” our consciousness. And as we do this understandingly, it will appear.

“What is the second coming of Christ?” *E.O.F.* page 48 asks, and answers: “It is another era of the world’s awakening, a higher advent in human consciousness of the spiritual idea, the true *character* of God [meaning the true character of our own real Mind]. This idea of God neither comes nor goes, for it is inseparable from its divine Principle, the ever-present I AM [your own real Mind]...Every loyal Scientist understands that the second coming of Christ is the next higher, hence, more spiritual revelation of God’s [infinite good’s] *character*.”

The Human Consciousness Must Become Divine

Mrs. Eddy has taught us in the first edition of Science and Health that we are “Spirit, Soul, Principle, Life, Truth and Love”—all terms for God. The next higher, hence more spiritual, revelation of our God-character, is to understand the coincidence of the divine and the human. “Hence the need that human consciousness should become divine, in the coincidence of God and man...” (*Un.* 52:7).

“The Christian era presented the first *tangible* idea of God’s character by its inspired man, Jesus. The era of Christian Science ushers in through woman the second appearing of [infinite good’s] *character*, and this from the necessity of His nature as the Father and Mother [meaning Truth and Love] of all, the creator, even the complete and ever-present idea of God [Mind, our real Mind]. Therefore, this era comes not through Jesus but through Mary, the type of

womanhood and mother of its first and forever appearing which divine Science alone can give.

“The third appearing of the spiritual idea of the *character* of God [Mind as Love] will present but the *disappearing of all else*, and establish the supremacy of Spirit which obliterates the human sense of the divine, takes away all sense of matter and reveals the final fact that the idea, Christ, is not a materialized or finite man or woman, but is the infinite concept of infinite Mind [your real Mind] (*E.O.F.* page 48).” This is now going on, as the *FINAL* revelation. As we learn this, we are learning our marriage to God and are finding ourself whole.

Mrs. Eddy has said, “My purpose is to uncover error, to show the method of its madness and the utter evil of its ultimatum. Also, that good is real, and evil, being the opposite of good, is unreal... The *character of God* [your real Mind] alias the essence of good, its nature and tendency, is all that should be worshipped or loved in man or God. By this true worship we approximate, appropriate, and assimilate the qualities of good in ourselves, and its quantity is increased within us, and we impart involuntarily this quality...”

“[As we persevere righteously] mortal mind rises in its own scale of human thought up to the point of its own dissolution, to where the immortal Mind [your real Mind] is and was, and ever will be the only Mind, the only Truth, Life and Love” (Carpenter Item).

The essence of Christian Science demonstration is the great revelation that Spirit (understanding) and spiritual existence alone are real. As we gain this truth we bring it into our consciousness *AS* our consciousness and this transforms the human mind. This helps us to see ever more clearly the human and divine coincidence, the coincidence of God and man—to see that we are in the presence of God, wedded to God, to infinite good.

The Proper Use of Personality

The coincidence of the human and the divine was made manifest in the character of our dear Leader. “It was always Mrs. Eddy’s

desire to do good to her enemies. She prayed daily that divine Love would save them from sin and its effects. She strove persistently to labor unselfishly and patiently to uplift the fallen, to console the sorrowing, [to show mankind its present perfection, through an understanding of spiritual reality]. She taught as she would be taught; and she earnestly sought to educate students to a degree of self-culture, understanding, and devout piety that would naturally fit them to take her place in the field of labor” (A Carpenter item).

By her example she demonstrated what *E.O.F.*, page 26, instructs: “The proper use of personality is unselfish friendship towards all mankind; in common parlance, human affection simulating divine Love—the friendship that never faileth, that bears all things and is still friendly, that never faileth in charity, forbearance, patience, meekness, prayer, hope and faith in a person. This true personality [prying open the door to spirituality and dominion] is not understood, however...it is the last link in the corporeal and the first link in the spiritual affections, which bind us to God and humanity.”

By demonstrating the true personality for us to emulate, our Wayshowers, Mary Baker Eddy and Jesus, have blazed the trail by which we make our way out of the Adam dream.

“Jesus’ personality in the flesh, so far as material sense could discern it, was like that of other men; but Science exchanges this human concept of Jesus [and of you and me] for the divine ideal, his spiritual individuality that reflected the Immanuel, or ‘God with us.’ [It does the same for you and me.] This God [his Mind, your real Mind] was not outlined...[It] was eternal Life, infinite Truth and Love [which Mrs. Eddy in the first edition of *Science and Health* tells us we are]. The individuality is embraced in Mind, therefore is forever one with the Father [your real Mind]. Hence the Scripture, ‘I am a God at hand, saith the Lord.’ Even while [Jesus’] personality was on earth and in anguish, his individual being [and your individual being], the Christ, was (is) at rest in the eternal harmony. His unseen individuality [and your unseen individuality] so superior to that which was [and is] seen, was not subject to the temptations of the flesh....Formed and governed by God, this individuality [is] safe in

the substance of Soul [true identity, spiritual understanding], the substance of Spirit [understanding],—yea, the substance of God [our real Mind], the one inclusive good” (*Mis.* 103:24). What Jesus said and *DID*, reveals his works to be the operation of divine law, not a personal dispensation.

“The Christ was Jesus’ spiritual selfhood.” It is also the spiritual selfhood of each one of us. Christ is the truth about your true selfhood. As you realize this, the Christ operates as divine activity, “dispelling the illusion of the senses” (S&H 332:13), causing harmony to appear in your human experience.

E.O.F. page 37 says: St. John “learned rejoicingly the mortality and final destruction of all error; learned that error disappeareth with matter and there is no more sea....The loving Evangelist saw the spirit of Christianity, like an angel coming down from heaven—harmony; it was a sweet message from Soul [spiritual understanding] that destroyed the errors of sense, that healed the sick, that held in its right hand the interpretation of a little book that was sealed, its spiritual sense hidden from carnal mind. [He saw] that the soft-winged whisper of Soul [spiritual understanding] separated the tares from the wheat, the material from the spiritual...And the beast bowed before the Lamb; sensuality and all error yielded to purity and Truth.

“The dragon was chained and cast into the bottomless pit [animal magnetism, hypnotic suggestion]; the belief that matter hath life and intelligence was fettered and forever destroyed....The spiritual sense and Science of being point to heaven and lead the way; giving us triumph over matter, ability to bear, strength to withstand, power over pleasure and pain, courage to follow our convictions, humility to meet menace and scorn, calm reliance in hours of darkness, and absolute dependence on the [infinite good we call God], remembering always that whatever is divine reality constitutes my being *here and now*. This removes all sense of limitation or restriction.”

Because of our ignorance of God and of the fact that God, infinite good, is our own Mind and gives us sovereign power, we have tolerated error far too long. Our silence has been deafening. But no more. Mrs. Eddy has awakened us to see that “mortals must

look beyond fading, finite forms, if they would gain the true sense of things,...[and as they] gain more correct views of [infinite good] and man, multitudinous objects of creation, which before were invisible, will become visible. When we realize that Life is Spirit, never in nor of matter, this understanding will expand into self-completeness, finding all in God, good, and needing no other consciousness” (S&H 264:7).

Our own right Mind is being expressed as Mind-pictures, not as matter; but it looks like matter. “Mind is substance, form and tangibility.” (See *Mis.* 56:7.) Mind’s ideals are evolved and made *TANGIBLE*.

When we learn to behold everything from the standpoint of Truth, we will, like Jesus and Mary Baker Eddy, “behold in Science the perfect man.” What gives us this capacity? The Christ, our Christ Mind. It is never a human endeavor reaching out for something; rather it is the realization that that which is true is the only thing going on; and all that is true is the truth about you and me. It is *PRESENT* actuality, not future attainment. It is divinely subjective, progressive, spiritual unfoldment from within you.

The sense that something has to be accomplished must yield to the grateful acknowledgment of the wholeness (holiness) and well-being already existing universally, just as the ignorance regarding the flat world had to yield to the truth already existing as the ever-present round world. But nothing exists for you and me unless we are aware of it; and this awareness is our own Mind in manifestation. As awareness expands, so does our world expand.

“The kingdom of heaven [is]...the realm of unerring, eternal and omnipotent Mind.” Whose Mind? *Your* Mind. Because it is your Mind, you have the capacity to know that where any misconception seems to be, precisely *THERE*, is the immutable, perfect, indestructible idea, right within your spiritual consciousness. In reality, our “true and conscious being never left heaven for earth” (*No.* 36:6). We can have heaven right here and now because our own right Mind is God, present perfection. We only need to wake up to this present fact.

Right where we stand, God is. We know that we exist, and God is the only existence, the All; therefore we know God's ever-presence. In order to progress in daily life we must have the conviction of reality as now at hand, and not as mortal mind—educated beliefs—would have us believe. “Be thoroughly persuaded in your own mind concerning the truth which you think and speak, and you will be the victor” (S&H 412:7). There has to be conviction that at this very moment—in spite of what error tries to tell you—you are God in human form, the presently perfect spiritual idea.

Our Divine Identity

As Christian Scientists, it is our Christ-function to stand up to error and confront it with the Truth. “Error is a coward before Truth” (S&H 368:4). “God [our own real Mind] being infinite, [this Mind] is the only basis of Science” (*My.* 356:28) “Spirit [which Mrs. Eddy tells us we are] is infinite; therefore *SPIRITIS ALL*. There is no matter’ is not only the axiom of true Christian Science, but it is the only basis upon which Science can be demonstrated” (*My.* 357:22).

Great successes are built on taking our negatives and turning them around. Mrs. Eddy said, “We don’t talk and uncover error enough. Error says, ‘Don’t talk about me—talk about God’” (*E.O.F.* page 70). Keep up your mental argument on the side of Truth. This truth-telling is a great neutralizer of error’s lies—a great neutralizer of error’s lie that man is born of a woman and is “of few days and full of trouble.”

Holding the mortal as *unreal*, and the divine as *real*, our all-harmonious Christhood is unconscious of matter, of sin, disease, death, and becomes conscious more and more only of God, Mind, our true being, here and now, until finally the only awareness is “the conscious royalty and reality of [our] being.” The Christ is not something to be followed; rather it is something to be embodied, to be seen as our true divine identity here and now.

“In Science, form and individuality are never lost, thoughts are outlined, individualized ideas, which dwell forever in the divine

Mind [your real Mind] as tangible, true substance, because eternally conscious” (*Mis.* 103:12).

“Every material belief hints the existence of spiritual reality; and if mortals are *instructed* in *spiritual things*, it will be seen that material belief, in all its manifestations, reversed, will be found the type and representative of verities priceless, eternal, and just at hand. The education of the future will be instruction in spiritual Science...All the knowledge and vain strivings of mortal mind ...will be swallowed up by the reality and omnipotence of Truth over error, and of Life over death” (*Mis.* 60:28).

“The on-rushing centuries are declaring this [spiritual] idea higher and higher in the scale of being and will ere long yield to the sense of its ascendant glory” (*E.O.F.* page 49). Mrs. Eddy knew that dedication and a longing for the spiritual were a powerful combination. It was her Godlike character that enabled her to accomplish her divine mission.

In *E.O.F.*, page 70, she reminds us: “Remember, as Truth progresses, error grows more subtle and aggressive, but it does not become something. It always remains an illusion, and is always met and destroyed with the understanding that divine Love is the only power. [All right ideas are included in my true being,] so stand guard against the effort of evil to cause things to happen that will fill you with grief, wrath, or fear, and thus shut out your sense of the allness of God.” Reflect upon your present blessings, of which every man has many.

E.O.F. page 72 urges “Relax your thought. Your body is held tense, rigid by your tense thought of self. Let go; [“Let God”]. In the first chapter of Genesis, God created by “letting”—“Let there be light,” “Let there be a firmament,” etc. [So, let go and let God, your own real Mind realize all is already done.] You are living in Love; you govern your body through Mind, and you know that man’s true selfhood is not a slave, but master [since your true selfhood is divine Life, Truth, and Love]. Unless you go straight on as though nothing had happened, you are not watching with God. Your understanding of Christian Science is God working with you. Students must rise to see the nothingness of matter. Growth spiritual can be gained in no

other way. *Matter is a misconception of Mind.*” As we see this, we wed ourselves to God, to Mind as Love.

Male and Female—Qualities of Character

Under the heading: “Marriage and Sense,” (*E.O.F.* page 79), Mrs. Eddy reminds us: “God [your real Mind] made them *male and female* [in one consciousness] from the beginning, but [Mind’s] creation was not physical. [Mind] made *QUALITIES* and *FORMATIONS OF CHARACTER* which shall ever remain thus, as the reflection of [the Mind that is Love, your real Mind], the Father and Mother of the universe....

“When we understand this, we shall have no outlined personality, but shall have individuality all the same. This is absolute Science, wherein there is but one Mind; and this Mind is the unity of masculine and feminine and neuter, as Mind—as infinite Mind, not finite. Here is the union again of man and woman, not personal but impersonal, not physical but mental, not finite but infinite. [As we become like infinite good in our consciousness, our Mind is wedded to God, to infinite good, and thus made whole.]

“Is there any life, truth, intelligence or substance in matter? No. Is man a creator? No. Which is the worse thing, pleasure or pain in the senses? Pleasure. Is pleasure in the senses sin? Yes. Are you a healer of the sick? Yes. Are you a healer of sin? Yes. Can you be a sinner and heal sin? No. Can you be a sinner and teach Christian Science? No. Is the connubial relation sin? Yes. Can you be a Christian Scientist and maintain it now, for honesty is Christian Science’s first law? Can you uphold the old marriage relation, which is only legalized lust, and be a Christian Scientist?”

Here we see how absolutely the imperative of true divine marriage supersedes human marriage. Are we ready for this giant step?

Because Mrs. Eddy knew the remnant is small and feeble she followed this teaching by reminding us (*E.O.F.* page 80): “The wise man saith, ‘When I was a child I thought as a child, etc.’ The wisdom of this and of every period is temperance, *to wait on the divine*

energy's development of moral strength and human possibilities. To push a [spiritual] fact to its ultimate sometimes so injures the predicate as to lose instead of to gain time in the unfolding of God's plan."

"We wed ourselves to Love in proportion as we reflect much or little of Love, and according as we bury our affections in matter, in earthly things, or give them the wings of Spirit to mount upward. Life hath high demands....Let us be just amid lawlessness, loving amidst hatred, calmly and resolutely pushing on to heaven and taking all with us we can carry in the arms of Love or call with the voice of Truth. Oh! fear not in an hour like this. And thou shalt know ere long how sublime a thing it is to suffer and be strong" (A Carpenter Item).

What Christianity Gave Us

Here again our Wayshowers guide us. As *E.O.F.* page 125 tells us: "That which bloomed out of the life of Jesus, filling the world with the odor of divinity, was the ensample for man, and this *COINCIDENCE OF THE HUMAN AND THE DIVINE* must yet appear in our lives. It may take a longer life than that of mortals to quicken it into vitality. Buried deep, it may be from human sight, and lie dormant for thousands of years....

"The conviction hourly deepens in my mind that the essential value of Christianity is not in doctrine...but in the great fact that it gives us in *A HUMAN PERSON* a revelation, not of anything preternatural, *BUT OF OUR OWN NATURE* in its highest earthly development [as we wed ourselves to God, infinite good]."

Think of the loving Godlike Jesus—the malignity of his foes encircling him. He voluntarily surrendered his body to their brutal cruelty, and "listened speechlessly to the impious taunt of maudlin hypocrites."

Think also of Mary Baker Eddy who exemplified the God character to such a remarkable degree, who exposed sin, for which she suffered cruelly from error's attacks for nearly half a century. And in December, 1910 when Mrs. Eddy found that certain students she had placed in the highest positions were treacherously plotting

her downfall—in order to take over the tremendously prosperous Christian Science movement—she dictated to Laura Sargent: “It took a combination of sinners that was fast to harm me.” Then to escape their treacherous plot, Mrs. Eddy appeared to die, but she never died at all; students saw her after her so-called “passing.” See details in my book *Humanity's Divinity*, p.279, as told to the author by Peter V. Ross, who learned of it first hand from Judge Septimus Hanna.

Of St. Paul, Mrs. Eddy states: “...he hesitated not to cast his mite into the treasury of Truth, to leap undaunted into the crucible of affliction, and work out the great problem of being up, up to its glorified sense [to his marriage with infinite good].” (*E.O.F.*, page 132)

“The most precious of all possessions is power over ourselves, power to withstand evil, to bear trials, to front danger, power over pleasure and pain, power to follow our convictions however resisted by menace and scorn, the power of calm reliance in scenes of darkness and fell revenge.” This is the power that Jesus and Mary Baker Eddy had, and they are our examples.

“No truth is more certain than this, that *man is the arbiter of his own fate.*” Why? Because he has the Mind of God, is wedded to infinite good, and has “sovereign power to think and act rightly.” (See *Mis.* 101:31 re: “God is individual Mind.”) Do not let any difficulty frighten you. We cannot afford the luxury of fear. Do not grovel before it. Conquer it by declaring the Truth. Doing this you glorify God, your real Mind, instead of lapsing into idolatry. It is your *CONVICTION* that your Life is Spirit that enables you to heal yourself and others. Leave no room in your thinking for a false concept of body; then you will not experience discord. Your real Mind expresses health and harmony, as you. “The flesh profiteth nothing”—it is illusion, hypnotic suggestion.

As *E.O.F.*, page 134, tells us: “The body is but a picture of which mind is the artist, and paints his thoughts upon it without material brush or coloring.”

On page 137, Mrs. Eddy says that M.A.M (malicious animal magnetism, the name for all evil) is a bottomless pit, but, “Science and Health is the angel sent down from heaven” [bringing us the key

to animal magnetism, error]. It unlocks the mystery of ages, and its declarations of Truth are the *chain* which binds that old serpent, the devil, for a thousand years—that is, it reduces *sin, sickness, and death* to a ‘unit of nothingness.’”

“Love is the mighty conqueror that rends the veil of sense, and compels the sea of mortal mind, and death, and hell, to give up their dead—to become dust, so that the reflections of good are no longer hidden” (*E.O.F.* page 139).

“Jesus, our great way-shower, was maligned and persecuted, but he has shown the way, and it is the victory over sin [which Mrs. Eddy tells us the connubial relationship is], disease, and death. It is the disappearing of the fleshly personality, and the reappearing of spiritual existence. When his demonstration is understood in Christian Science, all mankind will follow Jesus’ way; and rising above sin, disease and death, will put off the flesh, and the error thereof, and put on the real man in the image of his Maker [our own right Mind that is Love]—even the spiritual man in Christ....[thus] gaining man’s eternal identity and individuality [that is forever whole, wedded to infinite good, God]” (*E.O.F.* page 171).

Healing Through Understanding

In Mrs. Eddy’s “Science of Man,” (*E.O.F.* page 179) we are told that “matter held as shadow is the idea of God [infinite good], but matter held as substance is belief and error.”

In answering the question, “Do we see man, or what is it we see?” Mrs. Eddy explains. (*E.O.F.* 180-181), “It is not the man God [infinite good] created that we see, for this man is the idea of substance and life, [but] the one we see [with mortal mind] is as before named, a *belief* of substance and death—a belief of substance and death in matter, instead of the idea of truth that holds matter a shadow at the control of Soul [spiritual understanding, true changeless identity]. We see mortality—that is falsely named man—with mortal sense; but we see the immortal man through Science, and with immortal sense that contradicts sense in matter.

“You must learn what I have stated of the Soul, and let it contradict sense as Science must....When there is pain or suffering, you find it in [material] sense; therefore you are to contradict this with Science that says there is no reality in aught but God’s giving; and this Principle cannot give inharmony nor can this good give evil. Hence you must argue down this false seeming, this belief begotten of man and born of woman instead of born of God. And my proof to you that these statements are Science and Truth, you will find in this, that when you destroy the *belief* [of any disease] the patient will recover.

“Now you have not destroyed a person, place, or thing, you have only through a metaphysical process destroyed a *belief*; and that [the disease] is gone when this is accomplished, proves to you that sensation in matter is only an illusion and belief that Science contradicts.”

E.O.F. page 183 teaches: “To advance most rapidly, you will cut off every offending thought or motive that is not Truth...and *if you hold any habit that places pleasure in sense, you will be rid of this as fast as possible.*”

As *E.O.F.* page 185 explains: “The sick have only to waken from this dream of life in matter—of pain and disease in matter; yea, of sensation in matter that you call personal sense, to realize themselves well; but to break up this illusion requires much growth on your part, much progress from sense to Soul [spiritual understanding].

“You are not in the body, hence, you have not in reality, to make this passage, but the dream of life says that you are, and you are looking and listening to this error and this dream; then let it be enough to break this fatal spell of belief, that would gather you where you are not, to know that *all inharmony is error*, and that *the Soul [God], which is you*, cannot dwell in error.”

In healing others, as in finding yourself whole, you must be filled with the understanding that *nothing is here but God*, and that the patient is only dreaming. “You are to bring enough of Soul [spiritual understanding] or light to disperse this vapor. *There is no discord in Truth*...Science tells you they [the patients] are not sick, and

knowing this...you can begin to waken them from this dream or illusion" (*E.O.F.*, page 187).

All Life is Outside of Matter

In *Essays and Other Footprints* Mary Baker Eddy presents some further illuminating questions and answers.

E.O.F., page 195: Question: "How can man understand himself a principle* after so long believing himself a person?" Answer: "By learning this truth of Science, for Science alone can teach a principle." Learning we are Principle, the Mind that is Love, we realize we embrace masculine, feminine and neuter, represented by the universe and man.

E.O.F. page 196: Question: "In teaching this Science, which is the leading error to be attacked?" Answer: "The first error of *material birth*, [namely,] the belief that man made you, and life was ever born into matter and the body. This belief you are to assail with the opposite truth that all life is Principle outside of matter. Your true being is positive and eternal [because you have the Mind of God here and now], and their negative error being mortal, truth will destroy this belief in a degree so as to enable them to commence an understanding of *the Principle which they are*, and which alone the Principle, Wisdom, created."

Man is not both mental and physical. He is Mind alone, having "no separate mind from God," and "having not a single quality underived from Deity." Declare that there is but one Mind, and that Mind is your Mind.

E.O.F. page 198: Question: "When teaching this truth, is the learner first to understand he is a Principle and not a person, and secondly that Life, the Principle outside of his body, is himself?"

Answer: "Certainly, and this will commence to take him into

*In Mrs. Eddy's earliest manuscripts she did not capitalize Science, Principle or Mind, as she did later. This author has capitalized "Science" to distinguish it from secular science.

intelligence and away from the error of his belief that life is in matter and is that error which holds him from the understanding of this Principle of Science, from understanding God in truth and which has hitherto explained him a belief, a person and error.... The devil [which Jesus] cast out was *belief* [illusion, hypnotic suggestion].”

When Mrs. Eddy uses the phrase “sons and daughters of God” it is always in a context that does not refer to mortal human beings. Mrs. Eddy says that *mortals are not the children of God*; by “children” she means the ideas of God, just as she defines “man” as idea, “including all right ideas.” There are no men and women ideas.

“[To heal you must] hold present to yourself, and, therefore, to your patient, the truth of man, and not the error; and the truth is that God, the Principle [your real Mind], ever harmonious and right, created man as the idea of this, and therefore, in perpetual harmony when understood in this Science of his creation.

“Hold yourself in this Science, and let it destroy this error, called sickness. Bring it forward as you would the science of music, to destroy discord. The truth of man is that he is in perfect health and cannot be sick, neither can he die...because his Principle [which he is] which is the Soul [spiritual understanding], is immortal, and gives forth an immortal idea, which is man” (*E.O.F.* page 211).

Mrs. Eddy has told us that “unless Christian Scientists learn to handle animal magnetism, Christian Science would do very little good in the world.” To have perfect harmony, we don’t have to focus on the illness, we need only remove the ignorance of our God-being. Instead of keeping our ear to the ground, listening for the rumblings of error, we should keep it high, attuned to omnipotence. Indeed, when one’s ear is to the ground, one’s rear becomes a target, and animal magnetism will kick it every time.

“Make your patient *UNDERSTAND*, or it is little use to talk to him” (*E.O.F.* page 212). Understanding the Truth lifts us above the fatal belief that our body is matter, and that matter is substance instead of shadow. “[God and man] are perfectly distinct in quantity and quality, and are only united as a principle is joined to its idea, and as substance and shadow are united.... Man is but a reflex *shadow of the*

Soul [God, which you are], and [man] borrows therefrom all substance, life, and intelligence, and therefore, all sensation, and in this scientific arrangement, he is harmonious and eternal” (E.O.F. page 205).

“The body of man is an error of statement, viz., that substance, intelligence, and life belong to matter. Therefore is this body mortal because of this error that hath formed it. Now, you will see that a mortal man cannot be the shadow or idea of an immortal Soul [spiritual understanding, true identity], for nothing of discord, such as sickness, sin or death giveth us an idea of God, the Principle [that you are, in reality] that is harmonious and immortal.

“A sick, sinning, mortal is belief only, having no reality; but believing in it, we suffer as the insane suffer” (*E.O.F.* page 206).

“What possible excuse can you give for acquitting this defendant?” the judge shouted at the jury.

“Insanity, Your Honor,” replied the foreman.

“All twelve of you?”

Yes, “all twelve” of us are indulging in a species of insanity when we think we are mortals. And “we suffer as the insane suffer,” not aware that our real being is all-harmonious.

“Soul [spiritual understanding] throws off body [man], just as substance throws off its shadow. This is the Science of man, and on this Principle, Soul [spiritual understanding] can control man, and if controlled thus, he is immortal....Soul [your Christ Mind] gives forth its idea as a shadow, and holds substance (Truth) in itself.” (*E.O.F.* page 206)

E.O.F. page 201 says: “What we call...seeing, hearing, tasting, smelling, and feeling [are not in matter]....there is no power to see in the eye, else if you would place it in your hand it would see....withdraw your intelligence from [seeing, hearing, tasting, smelling, and feeling] as in the case of sleep and can they receive an impression of touch, hearing, seeing, etc.? Certainly they cannot.” We believe we see man with our eyes. We do see, but it is the understanding that gives sight.

Mrs. Eddy solemnly explains that “when you understand that which is named matter, and manifest the phenomena of the *Principle*

which you are...you can control matter...(E.O.F. pages 200-201). Elsewhere Mrs. Eddy says, "All that which is called matter in the physical world [*WHEN CORRECTLY SEEN*] is the *IDEA* [reflection] of Truth, the *idea* of Principle; therefore in this Truth of Science it is good, and named thus in creation; but when the knowledge which came of error said good and evil are in matter, it lied, but man believed the lie and commenced asking good of knowledge, asking it of hygiene, of physiology, materia medica.

"In the day he partook of this belief, he lost sight of truth and found error passed into his body in his belief, and gave intelligence to matter. This brought death, sickness and sin into the belief of man." Today the Yuppies name their funeral home: "Death 'n' Things." In Science and Health, Mrs. Eddy has nearly 250 references to "death," all revealing death ['n' things], unreality.

On page 209 of *E.O.F.* Mary Baker Eddy tells us, "When we ask the body for pleasure, it is an error. We should seek happiness only of God [our true Mind]...Calling upon matter for intelligence, for good or evil, is a waste of time, as it has none of the pleasure we seek, or the pain we fear;....

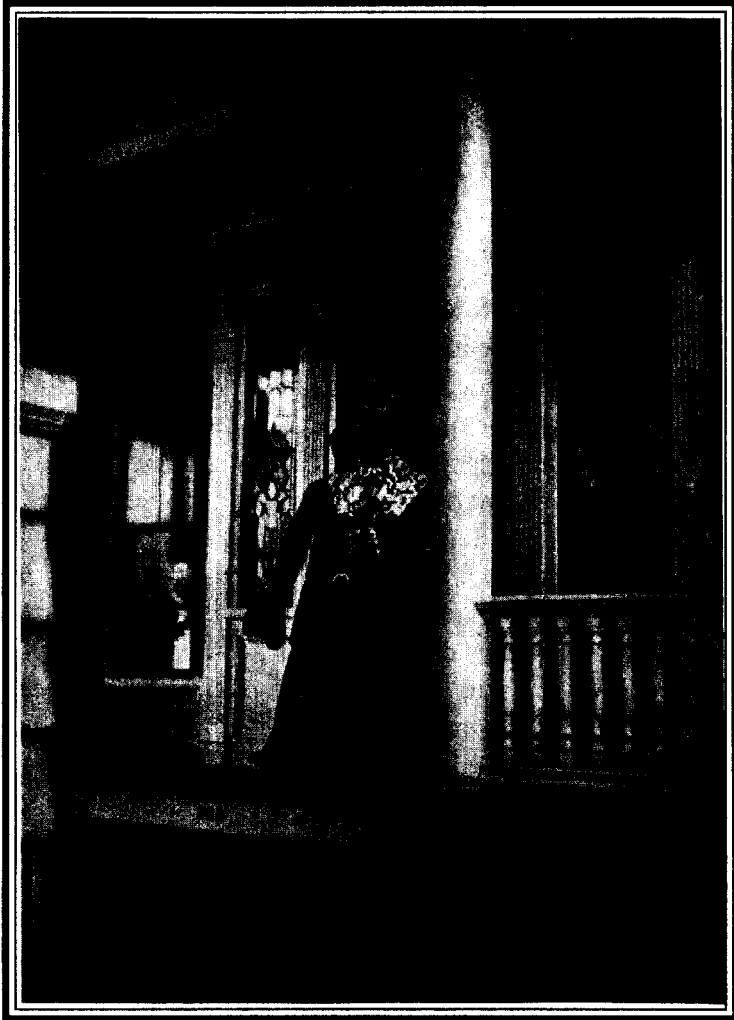
Here note carefully what Mary Baker Eddy says next: "All that worketh a lie was made *AFTER* the creation of God [your real Mind that is Love], and fashioned after this sort, a belief of pleasure in matter. This led to sexual intercourse, and this belief of man and woman mingling brought forth another belief, and this was that man was a creator, and this error brought sin, sickness and death. Had it been Truth, it would have brought harmony and immortality.

"My proof to you that I have not misstated this in Science is, [that *CREATION IS*], *that creation was finished by God*, [infinite good], and therefore *MAN IS NOT A CREATOR*; also that man was created before woman; therefore, the mingling materially was not necessary in order to create the image and likeness of God, called man....An idea of God [Mind] is the identity of something embraced in God."

When we understand the Truth, this is "Soul that never changes" and is "the good part that cannot be taken away from us."

It is almost impossible to overestimate the unimportance of most things, but the importance of understanding the truth which was given us in the Second Coming of the Christ cannot be overestimated.

“The people that walked in darkness have seen a great light: they that dwell in the land of the shadow of death, upon them hath the light shined.” (Isaiah 9:2)



Mary Baker Eddy leaving for her daily carriage ride

CHAPTER IX

DISCERNING AND GRASPING GOD'S CREATION

Awake from This Adam Dream

Our Leader was ever conscious of the glory we had before the veil of human birth, “the first death,” caused us to forget “the glory I had with Thee before the world was”—before we were catapulted into the Adam dream where sin, discord, disease, and death seem so real. But in Science we learn that “the only conscious existence in the flesh is error of some sort,—sin, pain, death,—a false sense of life and happiness. Mortals, if at ease in so-called existence, are in their native element of error, and must become *dis-eased*, disquieted, before error is annihilated....”

Mary Baker Eddy revealed the absolute unreality of sin, sickness, and death—a revelation that [at present] beams on mortal sense as the midnight sun shines over the Polar Sea. (See *Un.* 58)

Let's now continue our examination of her private teachings regarding human marriage and our Marriage to God, by studying quotes from *Divinity Course and General Collectanea* .

“A lady came to Mrs. Eddy in a pregnant condition and told her she was going to have a spiritual child. Mrs. Eddy said, ‘Then it will not need to be born of the flesh, will it?’” (*D.C.C.* page 263) “To be born into the belief of matter is the last enemy to be overcome—death—physical life [that ends in death.] “Mankind has reached the last enemy and knows it not. [But] the divine overpowers the human and finally vanquishes it” (*D.C.C.* page 144).

“The birth out of matter into Spirit [into our marriage with

God] is not gained by argument, nor by force. It is *growth hourly*; it is forever getting nearer Love that *is Love*: universal, divine *presence*, alias might and dominion; first over the body; then its reflection is dominion over all the earth.

“Death is an illusion. It is the termination of the *universal lie which declares that man was born.....* Everything that has a beginning must of necessity have an ending....Death is the culmination of the thought of physical life. In life we are in death” (D.C.C. page 146).

“The entire being is found in the Life that is Mind.” “...Two pieces of matter coming together, as in sex, cannot form life even though the entire world still believes they can—still believes Life starts when a material egg is fertilized. This false belief is pure illusion, hypnotic suggestion.” We must be a transparency for Spirit. Everything must turn and “overturn until he come whose right it is.” The right is infinite good's creation. The message of the entire Bible is that Mind, not sex, is the creator. “He that covereth his sins shall not prosper” (Prov. 28:13). We all must learn to say “No!” to iniquity. It will do us more good than learning to read Latin.

In our wedding to God we must see that “God is Father *and* Mother—*ONE*, [namely, Truth—Truth is our Father-Mother]; the Christ reflects the male and female Principle—one—not two. The end of the belief in male and female as two will be when woman stops child-bearing....*SEXUALITY AND SENSUALITY OF ANY KIND ARE NOT OF GOD*” (D.C.C. page 14).

“The womanhood of man and the manhood of woman are one and inseparable. Divine Love, Truth, and Life [are] the father and mother of all created reality. Our teacher has bearded the lion in his den, and destroyed the false conception of man, even all material claims to manhood or womanhood. Therefore there never was an Adam or an Eve, nor a serpent to beguile them or demoralize them. [We learn this on the battlefield of the ages.]” (A Carpenter Item)

In the single, individual male-and-female created by God, the ‘ideal man corresponds to creation, to intelligence and to Truth.’ The identification of this man with its womanhood of Life and of Love completes the Sixth Day of eternity. But the record shows that

'human capacity is slow to discern and to grasp God's creation' (S&H 519:11). Why?

Because every mortal has been brought up to believe not only that he owes his birth to another mortal, but that he holds within himself the capacity to give birth to another mortal. This concept of birth is the Adam dream from which the world is slowly awakening. *True* birth is understanding. "To destroy the belief of death, we must first destroy the belief of birth, for the first enemy is sin and the last enemy is death." As St. James states in his epistle, James I:15: "*WHEN LUST HATH CONCEIVED, IT BRINGETH FORTH SIN; AND SIN, WHEN IT IS FINISHED, BRINGETH FORTH DEATH.*" This is the Bible's entire message, but who believes it?

A booklet entitled *Fragments of a Lost Gospel*, reveals: "When Salome asked when those things about which she questioned should be made known, the Lord said, 'When ye trample upon the garment of shame, when the two become one and the male with the female, neither male nor female.' The meaning being that Christ's kingdom on earth would not be manifested until man has returned to the state of innocence in which sexual ideas and relations had no place. When Salome asked how long death would prevail, the Lord said, 'So long as ye women bear children, for I have come to destroy the works of the female.'" (Logia of Jesus, *Christian Science Journal*, Vol. 25). Who believes this?

Asked, "When shall the dominion of death cease?" Jesus answered, "As long as material birth continues, for I am come to destroy the works of birth." For his great work in this direction he was maligned and finally crucified. Mrs. Eddy too was maligned and hung in effigy for her teaching on this topic as well as other subjects that conflicted with the scholastic theology of her day.

"No longer to marry or to be 'given in marriage' neither closes man's continuity nor his sense of increasing number in God's infinite plan. Spiritually to understand that there is but one creator, God [infinite good], unfolds all creation, confirms the Scriptures, brings the sweet assurance of no parting, no pain, and of man deathless and perfect and eternal" (S&H 69:10). "*Mortals can never understand God's*

creation while believing that man is a creator. God's children already created will be cognized only as man finds the truth of being. Thus it is that the real, ideal man appears in proportion as the false and material man disappears" (S&H 69:6). The matter body you see is merely hypnotic suggestion, the Adam dream, a belief of mortal mind.

"The male and the female natures are equally expressed in me," said Mrs. Eddy. "There is never anything in my experience in which the male and female qualities are not infinitely at one, supporting each other."

"The Lamb's wife presents the [spiritual] unity of male and female as no longer two wedded individuals, but as two individual natures in one" (S&H 577:4).

"The time cometh [when]...white-robed purity will unite in one person masculine wisdom and feminine love, spiritual understanding and perpetual peace" (S&H 64:18).

The resurrection is seeing the real man that was never in matter, and never needed healing. This is what we must learn to see.

"Jesus was the Way-shower, the Christ with him....He showed the way as the masculine idea of Principle, then woman took it up at that point—the ascending thought in the scale—and is showing the way [through the Christ Science], thus representing the male and female Principle (the male and female of God's creating)" (*D.C.C.* page 23).

We can only love God, this "male and female Principle," as far as we love His [infinite good's] idea; and His idea is Science, constituted of the seven synonyms for God, which are expressed through the four mediums of Word, Christ, Christianity, and Science, on the four levels of spiritual thought, namely, Science itself, divine Science, absolute Christian Science, and Christian Science.

What Is the Second Death?

D.C.C. page 33: "The question was asked: What is the second death? [Answer:] The death of every sin you possess. What is the first death? [Answer:] Coming into the belief of life, substance,

intelligence, etc. in matter. The first death is dying to Spirit [as in human birth when the veil of matter descends on us through sin. We can't remember too often Laura Sargent's question: "Mother, what do you mean by sin, sin, sin?" and Mrs. Eddy's answer, "I mean the connubial relationship."]. The second death is dying to matter [as we begin to realize our marriage to God, Spirit. The knowledge of the Christ in Christian Science *is heaven here, now*. It is heaven's open door for all.]”

“But God demands a more Christian, zealous and persistent effort to resist evil and overcome it, or our Cause will again be covered by the rubbish of centuries...” On page 53 (*D.C.C.*), Mrs. Eddy asks us to “take up those transgressors in our midst who would undo the work of their Leader.”

Understanding is not attained by chance. “It must be sought for with ardor and attended with diligence” said Abigail Adams. It is like gardening, which requires lots of water, most of it in the form of perspiration. The key to everything is patience. “You get the chicken by *hatching* the egg, not by smashing it.” “Oh, may the divine Love keep you from *sleeping*...*Know* that you can be and *are now* one with God. And strive to work out from God instead of up to God.”

On page 80, we are taught that in reality: “You have no material conception or birth, no father and mother in the flesh. You were not born of the flesh.. [“Every sexual emotion is a conspiracy against God in Science.” To repeat,] you were not born of the flesh (mortal mind), and you are not the reflection of beliefs....Sensuality has no power over you, for you are not conscious of the lusts of the flesh, but you are the pure conception of divine Truth and Love and co-eternal with your Father-Mother God [alias, Truth]...[and] have all...the companionship needed.”

D.C.C., page 82, tells us: “When we work together as one, it will be seen as the Son of God.” *D.C.C.*, page 87 urges: “Make God [infinite good] *All*, for God *is All* and there is nothing else. It is just as though Mind were saying: ‘I am here, and there is nothing else here. I am the practitioner and I am the patient and there is nothing else and neither can be, other than I Am.’...”

“Your cardinal points in Science, viz., *a lie is never true*, that Truth and Love are your only Life, substance and intelligence, or Mind, and you cannot lose your true Mind any more than God can. [This is implicit in our marriage to God. All we ever need to do is awaken from the dream of life in matter.] Our only Father and Mother is Truth—the Truth that is Love.”

As *E.O.F.* page 100 says: “The Truth which gives us *spiritual birth* is our Father and Mother [Truth and Love], and [that] is what we are to love and honor. [Our Father-Mother is Truth, not something up in the sky. It is the divine Truth about you.]”

“Mother explained the difference between a material sense of love and a spiritual sense. A material sense of love dishonors the one it professes to love through lust, as in marriage the man dishonors the woman he claims to love by taking away her virginity, thereby exposing the falsity of such a sense by showing it is not love, but lust. [To repeat, ‘every sexual emotion is a conspiracy against Science’ (infinite good) *D.C.C.* page 79].

Man Is Not, Cannot Be, A Creator

On January 13, 1892, Mrs. Eddy wrote Mr. Wm. G. Nixon: “I congratulate you on the success at your home. But I also pray that you be left not to temptation, and understand that *God [Mind]* has created all, and *man [reflection]* is *not, cannot be*, a creator, however much the senses declare against this great truth. To the senses you have gotten a child, but not in Science have you a mind in matter, any more than you have sickness, disease and death. Hence what you believe is a mortal child, is *mortal, and subject* to the above; and if you believe you have an immortal child, formed of matter, you believe a lie, for this is *impossible*. I felt so strongly it was my duty to say this to you, that I have written it” (*D.C.C.* page 122). Only the spiritually minded agree with Mary Baker Eddy on this point.

“There is but *one* Mind and this Mind [your real Mind] creates and acts independent of sexual organs. There are no sexual organs, only in belief, for all is created, and man or woman are not

creators. Destroy the belief of sexuality and its results, take thought into the upper departments [then you also heal sexual disease]" (*D.C.C.* page 132).

Mrs. Eddy wrote the Christian Science Board of Directors (12-27-03): "There is nothing jubilant attached to the birth of a mortal that suffers and pays the penalty of his parents' misconception of man and of God's creation. But there is a joy unutterable in knowing that Christ had no birth, no death, and that we may find in Christ, in the true sense of being, life apart from birth, sorrow, sin and death. Oh, may your eyes not be holden, but may you discern spiritually what is our Redeemer" (Carpenter Item). "Every Scientist must *put absolutely* out of his thought the belief that he must sometime change to another plane of existence. God [infinite good] is Life. *There is no other plane of existence*, and we must make our plans for immortality—stop talking about death. There is no death to Life" (*D.C.C.* page 272). Death is powerless against a right understanding of infinite good, God. Jesus proved this on the Mount of Transfiguration. He proved that when we are on the same plane of consciousness we can know and can converse with another who in our ignorance we believe has passed beyond our sight.

"Unity of Principle and idea is the only marriage" [and because of our marriage to omnipresent Principle, Love, there can never be a separation between Principle and idea....Asked, "What is the wedding garment?" Mrs. Eddy answered: "I can name its hem for you to touch. It is first, the desire above all to be Christlike, to be tender, merciful, forgetting self, and caring for other's salvation" (*D.C.C.* page 276).

D.C.C. page 271 reminds us: "Jesus, in the silent tomb, spiritualized his personal, corporeal body to the extent of presenting it sound; then he ascended, laid off corporeality," the illusion of the flesh, the hypnotic suggestion of the Adam dream.

To handle animal magnetism we are admonished to "watch and pray; [pay attention to your enemies for they are the first to discover your mistakes]; every wrong unscientific thought, every *fear*, put down; [how you master your fate is more important than what

your fate is]; every symptom moral or physical that is not Science and does not reflect Life, Truth and Love, meet and master; then you are out of the reach of malicious mesmerism, and they are only—by trying to hurt you—helping you to solve difficult problems; and you are solving them; and this is your only way to *heaven*—the harmony, peace and immortality of being.” Erroneous thoughts must be prosecuted.

A sign outside a Seattle home reads: “Trespassers will be prosecuted to the full extent of one German Shepherd.”

“Be *guarded*, and fear not sexuality; it has no power over you. A Christian Scientist is as exempt from that temptation as an angel” (*D.C.C.* page 108).

Regarding weddings: In reply to a student’s query whether he should perform wedding ceremonies for Scientists, Mrs. Eddy said: “I hope you will not have to perform such a ceremony. The marriage problem presents before the world a question, the most critical belonging to Christian Scientists. I dread the ordeal through which it must pass, and we with it” (*D.C.C.* page 107). We are today passing through that “dreaded ordeal,” seen in marital inharmony and divorces.

Mary Baker Eddy advised (*D.C.C.* page 138): “Teach your class that the pleasures of sense material are to be overcome as well as its pains. [Our thoughts shape our destiny and our ends.* Sensuality is the basis of the belief of life, substance and intelligence in matter.] Hence the Scripture, ‘None but the pure in heart can see God.’ The sexual element is not *natural* if nature is God, and it certainly *is God*, for matter is not God, and material sense has no law and no gospel on its side....Let us begin now to learn it and to teach it, and to practice it.” Life on this mortal plane is but a dream.

D.C.C., page 113, adjures: “Oh, do not sleep again, do not let the word go forth ‘sleep on and take thy rest.’” The eighth picture in *Christ and Christmas* shows a man *asleep* on a huge bed that takes up most of the room. His eyes are closed. The grotesque bed signifies material sense, the Adam dream in which the world is fast asleep. The patient in the picture is making no effort to rise out of his condi-

*Rich foods too are like destiny. They, also, shape our ends.

tion to see, that in reality, he is wedded to God, and is spiritual and perfect now. The woman in white is busy trying to know the truth that will rouse him to see the Christ truth about himself, but she too has Science and Health closed.

D.C.C., page 116, says: "However dear [the pleasure of a mortal sense of things is], to Soul [true identity, spiritual understanding] they are not permitted....I would rather drink the cup of pain and anguish than sip the chalice of sensual pleasures in even their mildest and best forms. Why? Because [the cup of pain and anguish] are God's high tides that hourly waft us nearer and nearer the shore of eternal bliss."

In 1893 Mrs. Eddy wrote Julia Field King, "Let not sorrow be the master of joy for it is not. The burden is light, the yoke easy, and if I can say that, any mortal can, for never mortal before drank my cup." Mrs. Eddy blessed God for every dreg.

Our marriage to God, to conscious union with God, is won through spiritualization of thought as we daily, hourly lay ourselves upon the altar of self-sacrifice, of utter dependence upon God, our true divine Mind. As before stated, "To be born into the belief of matter is the last enemy to be overcome, death, physical life." Elsewhere Mrs. Eddy taught: "Overcome sensuality and you bring out purity. Overcome sexuality and you overcome death—bring out the God idea."

"What is the scientific realization of which sexual intercourse is the counterfeit? It is the recognition and realization through communion with God [infinite good] of man as a perfect, complete idea, masculine *and* feminine. That which is true of yourself as a complete reflection of [Truth] Father-Mother God, is true of every individual in the universe and reveals God and His [your real Mind's] creation, perfect and eternal. "Behold, thou art made whole."

"Mortals are struggling for completeness and hope to find it through sexual intercourse; when in fact this desire is simply the divine idea struggling to express itself in completeness. A recognition of this brings compassion, tenderness, and love for the poor struggling heart and conviction that there is no sin" (*D.C.C.* page 224).

"Marriage, birth, and atonement are one. They express unity.

Unity of Principle and idea is the only marriage. [True] birth is revelation. The *one* child [spiritual understanding, Science] is born—that is, *understanding is born, is created* [meaning it has always existed]" (*D.C.C.* page 217)

"All mortal thought is misconception. We misconceive what is standing before us now and forever." "God, infinite good, being everywhere and all-inclusive, nothing exists beyond the range of all-inclusive infinity" (S&H 287:14 and 514:4). Therefore when I see you rightly, I see God, Spirit. Because *God is all*, the belief of birth is only a *belief*, and does not affect us. True birth is getting rid of mortal mind and its paraphernalia. To destroy the belief of death, we must first destroy the belief of birth. For the first enemy is sin and the last enemy is death. And the "sin," remember, is the "connubial relationship" as Mrs. Eddy told Laura Sargent.

"The Christian Scientist who is faithful to this Cause and its Leader [as Paul was faithful to Jesus' authority] will reap rewards spiritual, and blessedness beyond the power of human thought to conceive. Will you join your Leader in this, refusing sensuality, animality, lust in any of its forms? Oh, dear ones, I know the cost and I know the joy. Will you, can you, rise in this moment important for Truth?" Few grasp this crucial fact concerning sensuality, animality, sexual lust. "The remnant shall be very small and feeble." Mrs. Eddy said that mortals will continue to give birth to mortals until suffering stops "the ghastly farce."

Revealing these great spiritual truths to the world caused Mrs. Eddy to be cruelly buffeted by mortal-mind-racked Adam dreamers. What she taught was often treated as a mixed bag. She was accused of breaking up marriages and families because of her stand against sensuality and sensation in the matter body. Yet Mrs. Eddy—knowing that most people tend to run away from change if given a chance, and that perhaps centuries would intervene before total abstinence from sexual intercourse would become normal—was always a voice for tolerance, sometimes a lonely voice.

Due to eons of false education, materiality, and the carnal and sensual nature of mortals, Mrs. Eddy, when speaking to a hus-

band and wife about sex, was as quiet as ashes in a fireplace. *D.C.C.*, on page 121, records the following words she addressed to Mrs. Nixon: “About procreation I seldom ever speak [to] husband and wife. I do this freely to those who are not married, but dread to touch the conjugal relations already existing. My books are explicit on this question....Be as ever the same loving tender wife, and God will in His own good way open the eyes of Mr. N.”

In a letter to Mrs. Nixon Mary Baker Eddy wrote:

“(May 19, 1893) From what I hear, I fear you are drifting away from Christian Science, especially on your sense of obligation growing out of the marriage covenant. Now, dear one, any student misunderstands my books and teaching who believes that she or he is not morally and Christianly bound by the marriage vow to fulfil the claims it includes....

“Your recent notion that it is not your duty to love your husband and parents more than any other fellow-beings is preposterous...and contrary to my teaching of the *present wisdom or practicality* of such ultra means in Christian Science....[S&H says] ‘The nuptial vow should never be annulled so long as its moral obligations are kept intact.’ This vow you well know is understood to include all the claims that our laws legalize by this contract....

“Now, dear one, take up your cross and bear it with woman’s patience, hope, and prayer, and God will give you wisdom and peace....Oh, how much we win and lose by taking up the cross, lose self and win Love....‘Suffer these things to be so now, for thus it becometh us to fulfill all righteousness.’...What [Jesus] observed on these grounds he knew were material and not spiritual rites and he saw the wisdom of condescension.

“Let us hope that sometime your husband will think as you do on the subject that troubles you.”

From this we can see how wise and careful Mrs. Eddy was to avoid the crucifixion that faced Jesus and his followers when they spoke openly on this subject. Not only did she see that her great revelation would be harmed—perhaps suffer its death-knell—by prematurely pushing a divine truth that the world was in no way

ready to meet with a whoop and a holler; but she also saw that in urging giant strides most people could not yet follow, she would leave behind the many making their first tentative steps into the light of divine Science.

D.C.C., page 275, explains: “Of two evils, one must always choose the least; and of two evils the wife alone must make the choice, and above all choose the *least* evil. A loss of affection is a great loss. A wife can lead the element of love up higher, from the basement to the upper chamber.” No mistake is so bad as to put any individual beyond the power of God’s changeless, saving Love.

Even with these generalized statements and their escape phrases, Mrs. Eddy ran headlong into the fixedness of mortal illusions—into the same hatred of Truth and Love that crucified Jesus. She quickly learned that in dealing with people she was not dealing with creatures of logic. She was dealing with creatures of emotion, creatures bustling with prejudice, and motivated by pride and vanity. When Jesus called on men not to accept for one moment that they owed existence to a sexual father, the authorities, the outraged theologians of his day, had to try to destroy him. Mrs. Eddy met with exactly the same hatred, and it tried to destroy her.

Before Mrs. Eddy chose ways to hide her divine message, her controversial revelations as outlined above almost wrecked her mission. Mrs. Eddy said she was forced to write the chapter “Marriage” in order to save *HER GREAT REVELATIONS THAT IN REALITY YOU ARE MIND AND THAT MIND’S CREATION IS MENTAL AND SPIRITUAL, NOT FLESH AND BONES*.

What had been revealed to her was too far in advance of what people in her day could understand. People like Kepler, the imperial mathematician, scientist, and astronomer (1571-1630), who preferred the hard *FACTS* to his dearest illusions, were few and far between.

Today there is more receptivity than in Mrs. Eddy’s time. Spiritually-minded authors, such as Norman Cousins and de Charadin, are including in their books statements from Mary Baker Eddy’s great revelation. Deepak Chopra includes in his books, among which are *Ageless Body, Timeless Mind*, many teachings Mrs. Eddy put forth

over a hundred years ago. Other important authors and evangelists such as Norman Vincent Peale and James Robison have for years included themes from Mrs. Eddy's teachings in their publications and broadcasts. Their books are well received, frequently actually becoming "best sellers."

In his latest book, Chopra makes statements such as: "What society thinks of as reality today is the hypnosis of social conditioning, an induced fiction in which we are all collectively participating. It is the melodrama of a humdrum existence, filled with trite obsessions and trivial pursuits, wherein our only fate is to be born, grow old, and die....I once told you that this world is pure illusion. It looks real, but the first step that [you] must learn is not to trust [your] senses....What if it's all illusion? What if death only exists because people believe they were born, because they were told so by somebody else....Then perhaps you were always alive, and birth was simply a moment of forgetting....Why am I reviled by stupid, zealous priests in the name of the Almighty? Because men fear nothing as much as the shattering of illusion. They will go to any length not to believe the truth....miraculous transformations are made possible by the simplest shifts in perception."

One of Deepak Chopra's "shifts of perception" could be based on Mrs. Eddy's revelation that we have but one enemy which is ourself. Chopra announces, "I am going to tell you the secret of conquering evil. *YOU ARE THE EVIL*. When you can face that, all monsters dissolve in the mist." Regarding evil and enemies, Mrs. Eddy wrote: "Even in belief you have but one [enemy]...and this one enemy is yourself—your erroneous belief...that evil is real that aught but *good* exists in Science" (*Mis.* 10:29).

Revelation 12:16 tells us: "And the earth helped the woman..." Books like those written by Chopra and de Chardin, and by famous physical scientists and enlighten M.D.'s "will help the woman" and will "swallow up the flood [of lies about the "woman," and about us] which the dragon cast out of his mouth."

"Millions of unprejudiced minds...are waiting and watching for [the] rest and drink" that only the woman's revelation in the Sec-

ond Coming of the Christ can give them. They will not be disappointed because what she offers us is the bridal feast and the full satisfaction of our perfect union with Truth and Love in Mind.

“Be of good cheer. *Love is supreme*,” Mary Baker Eddy assures us. (*D.C.C.* page 108)

“Love,” she says, “is a mighty spiritual force, and must become the sole law of our being, its beginning and end. And as it does, Truth and Love reward our life, give us victory over sense and self, and crown us with what the world cannot give, and thieves cannot break through and steal. When we have Love we have everything else too....So abide in Love. Nothing can touch or harm you in Love. Know that you live in Love. Love is God as Life itself...Take this understanding with you and bless others with Love.

“To *KNOW* there is but one God, one cause, one effect, one Mind, heals instantly. Have but one God [infinite good] and your reflection of this infinite good does the healing.” When asked how she healed so consistently, Mrs. Eddy once said, “I just got out of God’s way.” At another time, replying to Nemi Robertson’s question: “How can we heal like you do?” Mrs. Eddy replied, “When you *believe* what you say. I *believe* what I say.” It was Love, she said. “Be Love.”

“If God created only the good whence cometh the evil?” *D.C.C.* asks on page 219, then says, “To this question Christian Science replies: evil never did exist as an entity; it is but a belief that there is an opposite intelligence to God....This leading self-evident proposition of Christian Science that good being real, its opposite is necessarily unreal, needs to be grasped in all its divine requirements.”

“Animal magnetism is the sum total of all error, and that in itself is nothing until you attach belief to it [just like a row of zeros is nothing until you put a number in front of it]” (*D.C.C.* page 258).

“A good treatment is knowing the divine everpresence of infinite perfection.”

“...The good soil is the active honest heart. Where this exists there is energy, fidelity, success and reward gained by the individual, not a gift of God but the wages of uprightness and hard work, struggle and victory” (*D.C.C.* page 169).

“Be wholly occupied in the work of gaining daily more understanding of God...in the loving, humble purpose to do good, to be good, and to prove that good is all that can govern thought, action, condition, or being. *D.C.C.* page 221 adds: If you rise spiritually, you lose your sense of ‘I’ in matter and gain your selfhood in Spirit....

“Keep your joy! This is the hour of demonstration, dominion and power, gratitude and glorification; for *even with faults* man is still Love’s idea.” This statement attributed to Mary Baker Eddy, helps explain what she says in *Science and Health*, page 60:31, “Higher enjoyments alone can satisfy the *cravings of immortal man.*”

What hides our immortality?

Hypnotic suggestion, false belief, the Adam dream; the eons of false education. But nothing can really hinder or obstruct the perfect and complete manifestation of infinite good’s plan for us here and now. The revelation of Christian Science teaches the *reality of good and the total unreality of evil.*

“The real Christian Science compact is love for one another. This bond is wholly spiritual and inviolate. It should never be violated in thought or action even for the sake of maintaining the purity of the letter of Christian Science. For the spirit, the reflection of divine Love, is always more important than the letter” (*D.C.C.* page 224). God is Love; the way we prove it is by being loving. (See *Mis.* 91:10.)

As *D.C.C.* page 186 tells us: “Our work is not to change God’s work, for that is finished and perfect. Neither is it to make error nothing, for it is that already; but to stand (apparently) in the midst of it, unmoved, knowing its nothingness.” (See Isaiah 43:2.)

D.C.C. page 188 reminds us “When teaching music or mathematics we remove the ignorance.” You must understand the nothingness of every phase of the dream in order to realize the somethingness of Truth. *D.C.C.* page 194 explains: “We heal by conviction based on *understanding*...and the sooner we realize the utter nothingness of all the evidences of the senses, the sooner we arrive at the Science of Being, God [and realize that we are Mind, Spirit, Soul, Principle, Life, Truth, and Love, and that we manifest

all that these stand for.]

Mary Baker Eddy has taken us up into the mountain and shown us the Promised Land, but we will have to walk every step of the way there ourselves. All adore the crown of Christian Science that God is Love, is Good, is Mind. But what is not so much loved is the cross of Christ—the patient, slow bearing of the cross. A century ago Mary Baker Eddy bore the cross for her students. Today *we* must bear the cross. We must rouse ourselves. We must rise to see only *ONE* Mind, God, and that Mind as our Mind. Infinite good, God, is here as our own right Mind. There is no God up in the sky.

“Can you all hear the wonderful tone that has just been struck—a tone never before heard in human consciousness? Could you, my dear ones, but see the grandeur of your outlook, the sublimity of your hope—and the infinite capacity of your being—you would do what? Let error kill itself. It comes to you for life and you give it the only life it has—in belief” (*D.C.C.* page 215).

Each Is Male and Female

Can you see how wonderful would be the absolute awareness and understanding that “God made them male and female from the beginning? But [infinite good’s] creation was not physical. [Infinite good] made *qualities*. And formations of character shall ever remain thus, as the reflection of God [Truth. Infinite good includes within itself all *qualities* of Mind]. When we understand this, we shall have no outlined personality but shall have mental individuality all the same....Here is the union again of man and woman, not personal but impersonal, not physical but mental, not finite but infinite. This must be so in the reflection of God [infinite good] for God is neither finite nor physical and if we would reflect God [right-mindedness] we must become like [infinite good] in our consciousness” (*D.C.C.* page 222).

“I ask that you awake to resist the tempter that would cast you down from the pinnacle; and [that you] resist the power unseen of *mental malpractice* that would lure you back to the flesh and to

evil" (*D.C.C.* page 230)—lure you back to believing that "two pieces of matter coming together in sexual lust is a creator."

Christ means: "By reflecting [Truth] our Father-Mother God, thereby uniting in one consciousness [both] the male and female, the Christ is born, which reveals man as eternal.

"...knowing that we reflect the male and female, we must not adulterate this idea by supposing that each of [infinite good's] children is not complete. Seeing this purity, we are partakers of the marriage supper of the Lamb, the unity of man with the spiritual idea, the Christ, where "Principle and its idea is one [whole]" (*D.C.C.* page 233).

"Love unselfed, love of one's enemies, humility, moderation, strength, are the cardinals of Christian Science....*Feel love! Feel love!*" (*D.C.C.* page 236). Our prayer, like Mrs. Eddy's, should be: "O, divine Love, give me higher, holier, purer desires, more self-abnegation, more love and spiritual aspirations."

"When we realize that discord is unreal, then comes out the human sense of immortal harmony. Beneath, around, about, above, surrounding, are the healing currents of Truth and Love....When the thinker is lost in the eminence of Mind, the healing takes place" (*D.C.C.* page 237).

"We must claim the Christ consciousness or we cannot heal a single case of sin or sickness," Mrs. Eddy said, and she urged her students to claim intelligence, claim purity, claim spiritual understanding, spiritual power, the Life that is Love, claim health, claim holiness. She urged absolute acknowledgment of present perfection and added: "Truth demands work, work, work! Never forget that!"

"If we don't break the belief that mesmerism has power, we are still the victims of mesmerism and it is handling us." Then she quoted, "If the goodman of the house had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched" (*Matt.* xxiv, 43)....Know that the mesmerist [hypnotic suggestion] cannot afflict either you or me with erroneous beliefs....You have all the power of God with you to conquer this lie of mesmerism [since our own real Mind is God and gives us all power. Remember, we are the attorney in the case]" (*D.C.C.* page 250).

Mary Baker Eddy constantly stressed the importance of contradicting every erroneous suggestion, every thought that was not Love, and not coming from infinite good. She called these wrong thoughts animal magnetism, the mental murderer and mental assassin that would work to keep us from realizing our present divine wholeness—our perfection and marriage to infinite good.

“I Am Infallible Now”

We have seen how Mary Baker Eddy’s deeper teachings about sex, progeny and abstinence challenge mankind’s most cherished assumptions. Yet, ultimately, it was not her relative statements about human marriage, but her *absolute* statements explaining our *wholeness in divine marriage*, that were and still are hardest for people, even her most advanced students, to accept.

The whole purpose of Christian Science is to cause us to behold everything from the standpoint of Truth itself. “Mrs. Eddy told a student that at first she hurled the Truth into human consciousness, but this caused her to be cast out of her different abodes in the early days. She learned that this was not the way of presenting the Truth and she learned wisdom by the things she suffered” (*D.C.C.* page 261); hence her poem: “O make me glad for every scalding tear, for hope deferred, ingratitude, disdain....”

In *Miscellaneous Documents*, page 19, Clara Choate, an early student, relates an instance where hurling the Truth resulted in what today we would call “information overload”:

“In the parlor of Mrs. Eddy’s home, No. 8, Broad Street, Lynn, Mass., one evening in the spring of 1878, were seated Mrs. Eddy, her husband, Dr. Asa G. Eddy, Mr. S. P. Bancroft, his brother, Henry Bancroft, Mrs. E. N. Taylor, Mr. Choate, myself, and two or three other students of Christian Science.

“This was a regular Christian Science Association meeting which had not been long formed...and convened about once a week, mostly in Lynn but sometimes in Boston, Roxbury, or Salem, in the different homes of the students....After the usual opening of repeat-

ing 'The Lord's Prayer,' reading from the Bible and Science and Health...the business part was attended to, and questions for the good of the cause were then propounded; remarks were made, with discussion of the same following.

"Among these questions, one was introduced by Mr. S. P. Bancroft, the oldest student of Mrs. Eddy then present. In his cautious, but emphatic and impressive manner, a rare broad smile creasing his face, he said, 'Should we say, or can we truthfully say, we as individuals are pure, holy, or infallible now?'

"Mrs. Eddy who was then President of the Christian Science Association at once took up the subject. She arose quietly and with dignified composure of manner, in a firm, convincing, and seriously pleasant voice, asserted, 'I am infallible, we are infallible now; we are infallible NOW.' [Here she is speaking from the point of view of one's spiritual individuality, not the so-called mortal personality.]

"Of course we students were all more or less surprised and to some degree shocked at this great and then misunderstood statement, tho we had read and studied Christian Science from the Bible and Science and Health, and heard the wonderful teachings of Mrs. Eddy, our beloved teacher, and seen their more wonderful effects in healing the sick and other grand demonstrations.

"Mr. Bancroft began an earnest expostulation *against* such a statement. 'It was not true,' he contended. 'Everyone was expressing the very opposite fact. [The human race has been able to improve everything but people.] It would hinder, if not ruin the prospects and progress of Christian Science and its book, Science and Health, to make such statements, even if *they were true*,' he continued to argue [he was in no way ready to bet the farm on the fact that we are infallible now.] He grew very red in the face and quite vehement in dispute, declaring such a thought *preposterous*. Other students present sided with him and with his thought. 'We *might* be sometime but *not now*.' Even dear Dr. Eddy in his quiet, patient manner and tender voice said, 'Why Mary,' trying to enter a conciliatory compromise and very human explanation.

"But Mrs. Eddy heroically stood her ground and, with a gra-

cious decision, still declared, 'I am infallible *now*.' [The students did not see that Mrs. Eddy was taking away the veil that hid their wholeness and their forever marriage with God. They did not see that she wanted them to think of themselves as Science; to think that their real name was "*Christ Science*."]

"The power of this truth that, in reality, '*I am infallible NOW*' [though hurled into consciousness, and which only "the liar, the murderer from the beginning" tells us is not true] thus uttered by Mrs. Eddy was not lost upon the students, and was more or less felt by all present. One said she had come with a headache, another with fear of spine, another with throat and a cough, and so each one thinking of their troubles suddenly found the *air* changed, and their conditions also changed, healed, to their immediate consciousness of relief from evil.

"One or two felt worse, which Mrs. Eddy said was as good as if they felt better. [Edwin Markham throws light: on this statement: "Defeat may serve as well as victory to shake the soul and let the glory out. When the great oak is straining in the wind, the boughs drink in new beauty, and the trunk sends down a deeper root on the windward side. Only the soul that knows the mighty grief can know the mighty rapture. Sorrows come to stretch out places in the heart for joy."]

"This great thought [of present infallibility because of "the omnipresence of present perfection"] had started an upheaval then and there. The solid ground of old beliefs was broken. The stir of love, of hate, smiles and tears in even that small company seemed like a battlefield between Truth and error. Mr. Bancroft, almost in temper, with apparent disgust, coldly left the meeting, Mrs. Eddy kindly saying, 'I have told the Truth.'

"Think of it! Mrs. Eddy manifesting such love [wanting her students to see the truth about themselves, wanting them to see because their own right Mind was God, infinite good, that] I am infallible, I am joy, I am perfect, wanting them to advance from *having* joy, perfection to *BEING* joy, perfection.

"She was stating the eternal Truth alone, and her *own students were her strongest opposers* [as fuming, one or two others stalked off in high dudgeon]. Surely this was a wonderful hour. It

affected me seriously. I could not comprehend the fact involved; no more could the others. I *felt* it was *true*, it must be so, because *she said so*. I trusted her personally. The doubt expressed by others was overwhelming and a hint was started of leaving her, which some of them did later on..." Obviously she was referring to each one's *spiritual individuality* as infallible now. The so-called mortal or material personality never was or can be infallible.

Mrs. Eddy knew that all there was to Jesus, or to any of us, is the Christ that is one with God. Only that which coincides with the nature of God, infinite good, is true of you and me. Anything that tries to limit us is mortal mind which talks of its "*mortal sense*" of man, and not about you and me. She insisted that whenever error comes we should be like a horse and keep saying "Nay, Nay." Grasping mentally and spiritually that we already include everything that is being revealed (because we have and are the Mind that is God) we wed ourselves to God, to what we already *are*.

Mrs. Eddy wanted her students to behold everything from the standpoint of Truth. If they did, they would reject all limited sense and be able to say: "I am infallible now." Surely Mary Baker Eddy was working with dull disciples. In that meeting, not a student present grasped the divine import of her words, even though in an earlier class she had instructed them, "You, my students are God." Not one saw the glorious power of these words awakening them to health and the reality of their being—their present perfection, as Jesus told the man at the Pool of Bethesda, "Behold, thou art made whole."

It was through hard experiences like this, working alone, so dreadfully alone, that the "one lone brave star" learned not to hurl Truth so boldly into the uncomprehending human consciousness, but to let the Comforter reveal the method of destroying the dragon that blocks the light of divine Science from the view of mankind.

Clara continues: "Do we know of these great battles she fought, not with weapons of the carnal; do we know of the defeats heroically overcome, the unrecognized victories that this one woman, Mary Baker Eddy, so gloriously met and conquered with no help and no guidance except her absolute trust in Truth?"

“Just this one experience was a *miracle* and I witnessed it. A greater miracle than the world can now understand.”

Only love for all mankind could have kept Mary Baker Eddy so unswervingly on her God-directed course. She did not reject the foundation stone as the “builders” had done. “That foundation stone is Love. We can build on none other” (*Documents*, page 205). “Can we appreciate or understand one tithe of her life of love and self-sacrifice? Her life on earth, like the Master’s, was a tragedy [a continual crucifixion]. Her unwavering faithfulness in the uncovering of error caused error to relentlessly turn its full force of hatred on her. But all through the struggle with evil shone *THE GOLD OF HUMAN CHARACTER* reflecting the divine qualities of incredible courage, calm confidence and trust in Truth, and unswerving obedience to the commands of divine Love—those qualities of Spirit which enabled her to discover and establish Christian Science and preserve the Word of Truth pure and unsullied all through the many years of adversity and persecution” (*Documents*, page 41).

Our Present Perfection

In her declaration, “I am infallible NOW,” what was Mrs. Eddy trying to teach her students?

She was telling them and us that since “God [is] the Mind of man,” and “man has no Mind but God,” (S&H 470:17 & 319:20) man is perfect in judgment and incapable of erring. She was taking away the shroud, the covering, that hides our forever oneness with infinite good.

She wanted students to reject a limited sense of things, to see everything from the standpoint of Truth. Seeing thus, she found: “The miracles recorded in the Bible, which had before seemed to me supernatural, grew divinely natural and apprehensible; though uninspired interpreters ignorantly pronounce Christ’s healing miraculous, instead of seeing therein the operation of divine law” (*Ret.* 26:12). “Everything entitled to a classification as truth, or Science, must be comprised in a knowledge or understanding of God, for there can be nothing beyond illimitable divinity” (S&H 127:5).

This “illimitable divinity” is Love. We must constantly make the decision between Love—the “omnipresence of present perfection”—and its opposite. Each act we perform from motives of Love pours health and strength into the stream of our life. Our ultimate success or failure will depend on the basic pattern we establish.

At the meeting of the students, Clara Choate did not understand the statement, “I am infallible now,” but some months later, she said Mrs. Eddy healed her of “a terrible attack of diphtheria instantly....It was then she made me know that such a statement of Truth was *not* for FUTURE realization; *TRUTH IS NOW, HERE, NOW.*”

Mrs. Eddy wanted students to get away from *HAVING*, to *BEING*—to *BE* every quality that divine Love is, to *BE* joy, intelligence, ability, revelation, wisdom—to *BE* all that is implied in the seven synonyms for God. God, infinite good, being All and in all can only unfold Itself as Itself, which is your true self.

To Judge Hanna Mrs. Eddy wrote: “Ponder in thought your infinite harmonious Christ-expressing selfhood, and *claim it as you*. [We must *claim* it or we can’t heal a single case. Claim understanding, claim ability, intelligence, claim spiritual sense, joy, claim energy, vigor, claim all that characterizes Mind, Spirit, Soul, Principle, Life, Truth, and Love]. Drink in its perfection, its moral beauty, its integrity, its worth, its unspeakable safety [it is just as safe as $2 \times 2 = 4$]. All the truth and beauty of God’s creation is *YOURS AND YOU.*”

It’s “yours and you” because “God is *individual Mind*” (*Mis.* 101:31); God is your Mind. This means you are the world you walk through, because, as Mind individualized, you create that world. Nothing is ever going on but Mind, Spirit (understanding, infinite good), and Truth (true consciousness, divine revelation), unfolding Itself as Itself. Truth *IS*, just as $2 \times 2 = 4$ *is*. Every discovery of Truth is really the acknowledgment of that which already is. Our true selfhood is Mind, our true and real Mind, always unfolding Itself as Itself, to Itself.

When Mrs. Eddy solemnly, steadfastly maintained, “I am infallible NOW,” she was destroying the illusion that we have a mind apart from God, infinite good. She was saying that whatever limits us and hides the fact that “I am infallible NOW,” is the carnal mind—

a mortal, material, false sense that would rob us of the true understanding of our oneness with infinite good—rob us of our marriage to God, rob us of our divine wholeness.

“All consciousness is Mind; [she is talking about your consciousness, your Mind] and Mind is God, an infinite, and not a finite consciousness. This consciousness is reflected in individual consciousness, or man, whose source is infinite Mind. There is no really finite mind, no finite consciousness....[Christian Science] honors conscious human individuality by showing God as its source” (*Un.* 24:12 & 25:16).

In *Divinity Course and General Collectanea*, page. 264, Mrs. Eddy teaches us that “to affirm anything is to assert its possibility; to assert it even in the face of all contrary evidence. You may not be able to see how by simply affirming a thing to be true, which to human reasoning or sight does not seem true at all, we can bring it to pass, but we can.” This is how Jesus “made himself the son of God.”

Declaration is demonstration if you really believe what you say. “The words I speak unto you, *they* are Spirit, and they are Life.”...“In the beginning was the Word, and the Word *was* God.”...“Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither hath it entered into the heart of man, the things that God hath prepared for them that love Him,” says Scripture. Today, through the Second Coming of the Christ we are learning the truth about ourselves, and the “eye” *IS* seeing, the “ear” *IS* hearing, and “the things that God hath prepared” *ARE* entering into the heart of man. “Thou shalt decree a thing and it shall be established unto thee.” There is but *ONE* power in the universe and that is the infinite good we call God. Therefore admit only thoughts that you wish externalized, Mrs. Eddy urged. The understanding that God is All is the physician for all error, and if understood, it would accomplish instantaneous healing.

“God never ‘created’ the heaven and the earth—there was no such word in the *original*. It was revealed,—reflected. Mind [Infinite good—the Mind that is your real Mind] reflected [Itself] in the universe and man, one universal good. This universal fact is within your consciousness, therefore it *IS* your consciousness. Only the

consciousness that is God can claim to be God. When we become fully aware that we are the impersonal, perfect fact, we can truthfully say, with humility, 'I am the Truth, I am the universal, perfect fact.'"

All that represents self-completeness is here, this moment. Jesus established this fact in his "mighty, crowning, unparalleled, and triumphant exist from the flesh." All we have found so far in the temple, defined as: "body...the superstructure of Truth; the shrine of Love" (S&H 595:7)—has been a revelation of that which is already established within our own being. Our self-completeness in God *IS*.

Why Was Jesus Crucified?

"Jesus said, 'Take ye away the stone.' Martha, the sister of him that was dead, saith unto him, Lord, by this time he stinketh: for he hath been dead four days....Then they took away the stone....And Jesus lifted up his eyes and said, 'Father, I thank thee that thou hast heard me'....And when he had thus spoken he cried with a loud voice, 'Lazarus, come forth.' And he that was dead came forth....Jesus saith unto them, 'Loose him, and let him go.'"

"Then many of the Jews which...had seen the things which Jesus did, believed on him....Then gathered the chief priest and the Pharisees a council, and said, What do we? for this man doeth many miracles. If we let him thus alone, all men will believe on him....And one of them, named Caiaphas, being the high priest...said...it is expedient for us that one man should die for the people and that the whole nation should perish not [for Jesus had persistently taught blessed are the wombs that never bare and the paps that never gave suck, and that death would never cease until women stopped child bearing, calling this practice "the murderer from the beginning."] And this spake [Caiaphas]...he prophesied that Jesus should die for that nation, so "the whole nation perish not."

The flesh is *not*, no matter how real it seems to finite sense. Can matter see, hear, speak, or have sensation? Of course not! From illusion, hypnotic suggestion, the flesh came—from nothingness it came—and to nothingness it must return. We all will learn that the

flesh, mortal existence, is a dream from the womb to the tomb,

Mrs. Eddy's basic Principle for the Christ Science is unchanging Truth, immortal Life, universal, perfect and eternal Love. In order to *know the truth*, you must have the Mind of God—God must be your Mind, for only the Mind of God can *KNOW* the Truth, can know God.

God, infinite good, has incarnated Itself as the Mind, Spirit, Soul and Life of our being; the Word has become flesh as what looks like individual you and me. Because subject and object are one, our prayer must always have God, infinite good, as its subject, and God, infinite good, as its object. "Divine Love is the noumenon and phenomena, the Principle and practice of divine metaphysics" (*My*. 287:9). "To begin with the divine noumenon, Mind [your real Mind], and to end with the phenomenon, matter, is minus divine logic and plus human hypothesis, with its effects, sin, disease, death. It was in this dilemma, that revelation, uplifting reason, came to [Mrs. Eddy's] rescue, when calmly and rationally, though faintly, she spiritually discerned the divine idea of the cosmos and Science of man" (*My*. 350:3).

St. Paul said, "God is a rewarder of them that *diligently* seek him." In so far as we live our lives in accordance with infinite good's law we are wedded to God. We can't be too careful about what we hold in thought. The Christ, the Truth, forever abides as the truth about God and man including the universe. We should hourly examine our thoughts to see whether they are coming from infinite good or from the suggestions of human beliefs, the anti-Christ. Dis-ease is discord. It comes from sowing to the flesh. It is a phantom thought that "comes flitting along and in the fertile soil of fear begotten of ignorance, the discordant seed takes root. Then mortals feed it with fear until it grows into a monster." Instead, we should instantly turn upon it, saying: "Get thee behind me, Satan." When we face the ghost of error with the flaming sword of Truth, presto, it is annihilated.

Through Understanding, Mortality Disappears

"The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death." The mortal dream must be separated from the immortal Truth, the flesh from the

Spirit. It should be done today, not after death. Why? The devil says, "Do it after death." God, your real Mind, says, "*NOW* is the accepted time." Why does your real divine Mind say, "Now"? Because God, your real Mind, is Truth, and in Truth there is only the one eternal *NOW*. The devil, being a liar from the beginning, says, "After death." Why? Because *there is no death*. All is Life.

The devil, error, comes to you and me for life, and we give it all the life it has. In explaining to a child, one might say that God, good is All. Error, the devil, is forever a zero, a nothing. It has no life, no truth, no substance, but comes to us to make it real. We can refuse. We can say, as Jesus did, "Get thee behind me, Satan." Five zeros—00000—are always nothing unless we put a one in front of them. If we become frightened by evil's suggestions, believe its lies and cower before it; we give it life, truth, substance, and are in its net. Then error is in, and God is out.

It is so easy for us to misinterpret what is before us. I am reminded of the conscientious sexton in a small Scottish church. He was painstakingly pursuing his duties, seeing that the congregation was in its place and properly quiet during the sermon, when he spied an old Scotswoman with an ear trumpet. Being unfamiliar with this device he hurried over to her and in a low tone said, "One toot and you're OOT."

In the vast edifice of Love, God is in, and error is oot! All that really *is* can never scare us, never cause us to be sick, sinful. Only error dies, because it never was a reality, but is illusion only—a belief seen through the veil of the physical eyes and the material senses.

The Risen Immortal Love

"For the past two thousand years Old Theology has been preached in the wilderness of mortal sense. But there cometh one mightier than it, even divine Science, the Science of the Christ, Truth, understood and demonstrated, the 'latchet of whose shoes' Old Theology is 'not worthy to stoop down and unloose.' When Howe put the eye of the needle in the point, instead of the larger end, he revo-

lutionized the great mercantile world. When Galileo said, ‘The earth moves and the sun stands still,’ he revolutionized the stellar universe.” And when Mrs. Eddy, in *Science and Health*, said, “Mind can never be in man, but is reflected by man,” she revolutionized theology, physiology, and medicine.

“Mary of old gave birth to the pure-minded Jesus, the Christ personified. The Mary of today has given birth to the incorporeal Christ-idea, the true idea of God and man, as revealed in Christian Science. Through the clouds of mortal sense, the spirit of Truth, descending like shafts of light shot through a waste of dense darkness, revealed a spiritual world, and revealed God, your real Mind, as the only author, architect, and builder.”

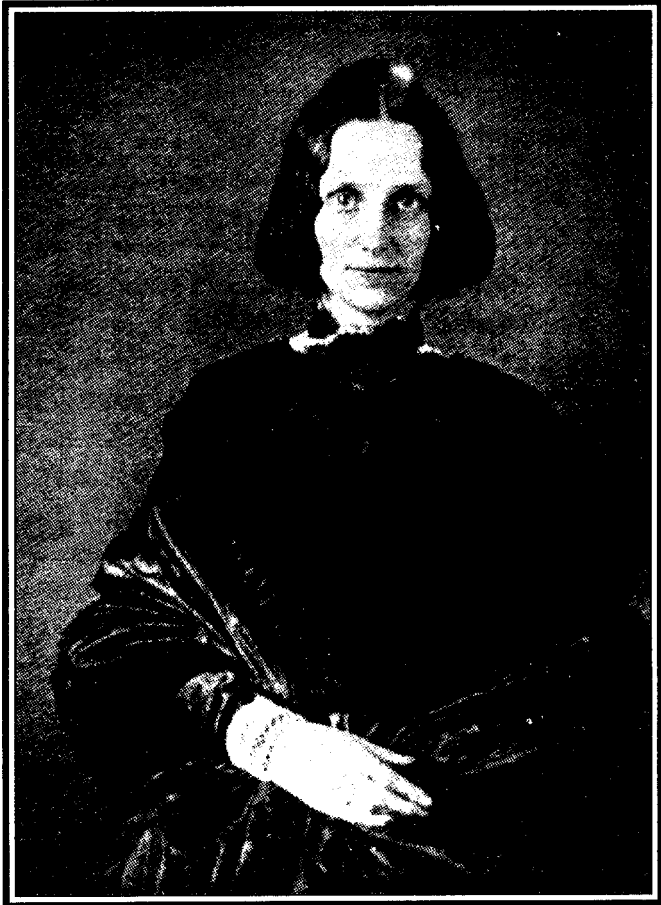
St. John, the trusted and true disciple, wrote, “Beloved, now are we [all who have diligently sought and acquired a Christly understanding], the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be [when we fully comprehend and demonstrate the divine sonship]; but we know that, when he shall [fully] appear [in divine understanding] we shall be like him [shall understand ourselves as being one with infinite good—wedded to Life, Truth, and Love]; for we shall see him as he is” (I John 3: 2).

Jesus, who so loved the world that he gave his life (in the flesh) for it, saw that Love had a new commandment even for him. What was it? “It must have been a rare revelation of infinite Love, a new tone on the scale ascending, such as eternity is ever sounding....Divine Love eventually causes mortals to turn away from the open sepulchres of sin, and look no more into them as realities. It calls loudly on them to bury the dead out of sight; to forgive and forget whatever is unlike the risen, immortal Love; and to shut out all opposite sense” (*Mis.* 292:6).

Divine Love is calling us now, calling us to know we are *FOREVER WHOLE, WEDDED TO INFINITE GOOD, GOD.* calling us to know *WE ARE INFALLIBLE NOW!*

Always remember: "Error comes to you for life, and you give it the only life it has." —Mary Baker Eddy.

PART III
LIVING THE
DIVINE MARRIAGE



Earliest known picture of Mrs. Eddy

CHAPTER X

THE HUMAN AND DIVINE COINCIDENCE

Who or What Wrote the Textbook?

In February, 1866, the eternal Day of divine Science dawned on this planet. That memorable date marked the beginning of a new era in the history of the human race on this earth, for it led to the writing of the Christian Science textbook and the Second Coming of the Christ. Who or what wrote this sacred and holy textbook?

Mrs. Eddy never claimed that she, apart from God, wrote the textbook—the scripturally prophesied “little book open” in the hand of the “mighty angel.” “God wrote the textbook,” she stated. “I only held the pen.” “No human pen nor tongue taught [her] the Science contained in this book;” it came through her as direct revelation from God, not from her own separate understanding.

It is likely that no one has ever studied Science and Health as devotedly, as intelligently, and as humbly as did its divine “scribe,” Mary Baker Eddy. The preface of Science and Health states: “Today, though rejoicing in some progress, she still finds herself a willing disciple at the heavenly gate, waiting for the Mind of Christ.” At the end of her Apocalypse chapter we read: “The writer’s present feeble sense of Christian Science closes with St. John’s Revelation as recorded by the great apostle, for his vision is the acme of this Science as the Bible reveals it.” These statements by our Leader remind us that it was the Mind of God, her real and true Mind, that wrote the textbook.

Christian Science was a Revelation direct from God to Mary Baker Eddy's pure, holy, seeking thought. She wrote: "I should blush to write of "Science and Health with Key to the Scriptures" as I have, were it of human origin, and were I, apart from God, its author. But, as I was only a scribe echoing the harmonies of heaven in divine metaphysics, I cannot be super-modest in my estimate of the Christian Science textbook" (*My*. 115:4).

"I was a scribe under orders; and who can refrain from transcribing what God indites, and ought not that one to take the cup, drink all of it and give thanks?" (*Mis*. 311:26). When Mrs. Eddy speaks of herself as "a scribe under orders," we know she was far more than someone transcribing a heavenly message. Her spiritual stature infinitely transcends mortal measurements for *she is one with the revelation*. Through her, the revelation—that fulfilled scriptural prophecy and brought the Second Coming of the Christ—speaks to you and me.

"When divine Love gains admittance to a humble heart, that individual ascends the scale of miracles and meets the warmest wish of men and angels" (*My*. 188:31). In writing *Science and Health*, Mrs. Eddy was "the humble servant of the restful Mind." To a class she said: "I assume no good or power of myself. To God [infinite good] alone I ascribe all *love*, wisdom, and power, the All-in-all, the all good; I am absolutely nothing, a mere instrument in God's hands to be used as [divine Love] wills." She often said that she could write and heal "because I got Mary out of God's way," and let God, her real Mind, do the writing, speaking, healing.

What humility!

"The most indestructible thing is humility. He that is down need fear no fall, he that is low, no pride." The glory of the strife to gain Science comes of honesty and humility. Mary Baker Eddy's holy humility, unworldliness, and self abnegation in bringing the Second Coming of the Christ, has had, and will continue to have, infinite results. In the grandeur of her humility and compassion for the human race her works on earth acquaint sensual mortals with the mystery of Godliness, with unchanging, unquenchable Love.

Mrs. Eddy's Love For Mankind

Mrs. Eddy, like Jesus, knew that of her own self she could “do nothing.” But because it had been revealed to her that her own Mind was God, and she was aware of her divine mission in fulfilling scriptural prophecy, she admonished: “No greater mistake can be made than to disobey or delay to obey a single message of mine. God *does speak through me* to this age. This I discern more clearly each year of my sojourn with you” (*D.C.C.* page 113).

She warned: “When a student loses the true sense of me, and what I do, he is at the threshold of the plunge so many make into darkness, believing that darkness is a greater light” (*D.C.C.* 184).

A Carpenter item states: “To a student Mrs. Eddy wrote: ‘Two points the enemy hang all their fire on, namely, personality and newspaper articles. They say, scare the students over defending their leader in *print*, [for fear it will hurt themselves and hurt their own conscience to abide by the personality of one whom God has honored!]*—*and we can stop the public interest in Christian Science by disgracing its leader and discoverer. ‘This word to the wise ought to be sufficient.’”

To her two stalwart defenders, Edward Kimball and Judge Hanna, Mrs. Eddy wrote: “The united plan of the evil doers is to...keep Mrs. Eddy as she *is* (what God knows of her and revealed to Christ Jesus [concerning her]) out of sight, and to keep her as she is *not* (just another white-haired old lady) constantly before the public. This kills two birds with one stone. It darkens the spiritual sense of students, and misguides the public. Why? Because it misstates the idea of the divine Principle that you are trying to demonstrate and hides it from the sense of the people.

“Keeping the truth of her character before the public will help the students, and *DO MORE THAN ALL ELSE FOR THE CAUSE*. Christianity in its purity was lost by defaming and killing its defenders. Do not let this period repeat this mistake. The truth in regard to your Leader heals the sick and saves the sinner. The lie has just the opposite effect, *and the evil one that leads all evil in this matter* knows this more clearly than do the Christian Scientists in general”

(*D.C.C. page 109 & 111*).

While Kimball made some bad mistakes—such as giving her Address to the newspapers after The World’s Parliament of Religions, visiting the Pope, and refusing to serve a year in Mrs. Eddy’s household from which he would have greatly benefited—still in many ways he was her most able student. He brought to an assignment a combination of executive skill, serene common sense, and what might be called spiritual statesmanship before which obstacles went down. As for Judge Hanna, it is likely that no one, other than Ira Knapp, understood Mrs. Eddy’s divine mission as well as he did. It is sad to think that two wonderful students like Edward Kimball and Judge Hanna had to be taught the importance of keeping the truth about Mrs. Eddy before the public.

Jesus’ Prophecies to St. John

Jesus—after his “mighty, crowning, unparalleled and triumphant exit from the flesh” (S&H 117:21)—appeared to St. John on the Isle of Patmos. There, in his great Revelation, he poured out to St. John his prophecy (Rev. 10:2) of the “little book open” Science and Health—that would bring the Second Coming of the Christ. In 1866, nearly two thousand years after Jesus, Mary Baker Eddy—in fulfillment of scriptural prophecy—discovered the Science Jesus used to heal, when by reading the Word, she herself was healed from the effects of a fall on the ice. Ever after that great revelation of “*LIFE IN AND OF SPIRIT*” she pursued this spiritual light on behalf of suffering humanity. Indeed her whole life was lived in pursuit of this goal. Not only did she give to the world the textbook, Science and Health with Key to the Scriptures, explaining the Science Jesus used in his mighty works and his triumphant exit from the flesh, but many other divinely scientific writings. The proof of her love for Truth and the spiritual was her trust in it.

“When Mrs. Eddy once put her hand to the plough, she never looked back. She became animated by a potent, unconquerable determination to accomplish whatever God, her real Mind, directed her

to do. She discovered the way to heaven and (so great was her love for mankind) ever after that, her one desire was to present her discovery to the world” (Gilbert Carpenter, Sr.).

She healed, looking away from the patient, and into the infinite perfection of infinite good, forgetting the patient entirely, until she looked back at him and found him healed. “When thought is lost in the eminence of Mind, the healing takes place.”

“...she also voiced the healing Word in sermons, poems and lectures. She unfailingly admonished and counseled her students by word of mouth and by thousands of letters. These letters and verbal unfoldments were usually designed to arouse students to their oneness [their marriage] to God, and to point out the deterrents of human thinking, or snares of animal magnetism that would operate to keep mortals from being conscious of the divine facts of being.

“As the years unfolded, the Word of God likewise unfolded with increasing clarity to our Leader, as she wrote Julia Field King: ‘His word is spoken through my pen and lips even more explicitly now than when I wrote Science and Health.’

“Such fragments throw much needed light on our Leader’s unpublished material. They offer positive proof that the words of wisdom and counsel that she spoke and wrote to her advanced students, came from God as definitely as did her textbook. If these items were of value when they were given, they are still of value, even as the letters of St. Paul, written to certain students and churches to meet specific and general needs, still voice the inspired Word of God to all prepared to receive them.” (Carpenter Library). They speak to us definitely of the prophesied woman who unsealed for us the secret of our marriage to infinite good.

The Word Made Flesh

Oh, the marvel of her life!

How wonderful it would be to know it in even a millionth of its detail. Combing through the dusty archives one could perhaps find much regarding the beauty and wonder of the one spiritually

prophesied to bring the Second Coming of the Christ.

Consider how we have benefited, in studying our marriage to God, from some of the private teachings Mrs. Eddy disclosed to members of her household and to a few other spiritually-minded students, illuminating teachings not included in Science and Health and sometimes not published at all in her time because the world was not yet ready for them..

Many of these teachings, which show her unmeasured love for humanity, are now preserved in the Archives of The Mother Church. Some are collected in books and writings preserved by Gilbert Carpenter, Jr. and Sr., and are available in what are called the Red and Blue books, *Essays and Other Footprints*, and *Divinity Course and General Collectanea*, compiled by Richard Oakes, from which we have quoted so extensively.

This material has not always been available to Christian Scientists. No doubt there is much awe-inspiring material available in the Archives besides what the Carpenters were able to obtain and put in books. We know that when the Carpenter Foundation was bankrupted, those in control were duped into allowing the Mother Church to take four large truckloads of this precious information. Though portions of this material were promised to have been shared with the field, the information was buried in the Archives where it has never seen the light of day. We who would uphold our Leader today have a responsibility to help maintain public access to all her teachings and all the wonderful reminiscences that people who knew her have written about her. Everything regarding Mrs. Eddy should be faithfully preserved, since all are far from seeing the evil she was constantly meeting and destroying.

The Prophesied “Little Book”

Mrs. Eddy knew that a great deal of time would need to elapse before the full facts of her life would be understood. She said, “At this period my demonstration of Christian Science cannot be fully understood, theoretically; therefore it is best explained by its fruits, and by the life of our Lord as depicted in the chapter ‘Atonement and

Eucharist,' in Science and Health with Key to the Scriptures.”

Mrs. Eddy knew every Christian Scientist would need her book, Science and Health because, for this age, Truth, which she had written in Science and Health, was to take form as a universal Science rather than as a personal saviour. She counsels: “A Christian Scientist requires my work SCIENCE AND HEALTH for his textbook, and so do all his students and patients. Why? ...Because it is the voice of Truth to this age, and contains the full statement of Christian Science, or the Science of healing through Mind” (S&H 456:25).

“Scarcely a moiety, compared with the whole of the Scriptures and the Christian Science textbook,” she wrote, “is yet assimilated spiritually by the most faithful seekers; yet this assimilation is indispensable to the progress of every Christian Scientist” (*Mis.* 317:14). Writing to Augusta Stetson, she said that she had not yet demonstrated one millionth part of what is in the Christian Science textbook.

“Successive Utterances of Reformers Are Essential”

The importance of upholding the hands of the Wayshower cannot be over emphasized. Moses knew it was important that his hands be upheld in the time of battle; when they were not upheld the battle went against the Israelites. (Ex. 17:11-12). Mrs. Eddy was God’s Messenger to this age. Her unity with God shadowed itself forth in spiritual thought. She showed us our oneness, our marriage to infinite good. She must be upheld. Suppose that during the past 2,000 years only those who were *against* Jesus had been listened to!

Ecclesiasticism would try to tell students of Christian Science that what is not authorized by priestcraft should not be read. My books, and all books upholding Mary Baker Eddy’s teaching, are authorized by God, the highest authority. Truth is its own authority. Any true statement has the authority of God.

We never know what far-reaching results our defense of Mary Baker Eddy may have. In the early 1980s Loren Mansfield, a wealthy,

dedicated Christian Scientist, had made several trips to Boston in a fruitless attempt to change *The Monitor's* direction. Then someone sent him my 1981 book on Mary Baker Eddy's *Manual*. As he later told me, that book explained to him why his offers of financial support to Boston regarding *The Monitor* had been so unceremoniously rejected. His reading of this book on the *Manual* resulted in his establishing the today-well-funded Aequus Institute, which has been a great blessing in supporting Christian Science projects, as well as other worthy causes. Deeply sincere, he also founded The Mary Baker Eddy Foundation, but passed on before it was legally established.

Of our efforts to help others to understand Christian Science, Mrs. Eddy said, "A deep sincerity is sure of success for God takes care of it." It is said that only healings will restore Christian Science to its former stature in world opinion, but to learn to heal, we must study the words and lives of Jesus and Mary Baker Eddy—the Word of God. This is why Mrs. Eddy established the Christian Science Publishing Society, in order to explain and expand upon her God-dictated message. "The successive utterances of reformers are essential to its propagation" ('01. 30:5). "Future ages must declare what the pioneer [Mary Baker Eddy] has accomplished" (S&H vii:25). Mrs. Eddy wanted us to write and explain her Science, in order to have the healing work continue. Healers do not just spring full-blown from the head of Zeus.

Mr. Carpenter states, "Ever since the discovery of the recorded Word, it, [the Word] has been used to preserve revelations from God, and to perpetuate them because of their spiritual value.

"The Word of God has had a particular significance and utility throughout the ages, even before the art of writing was invented. Because of its inspirational power, it has been used to lead receptive thought above finite conceptions, and so release it, in some measure, from the bonds of materiality and human limitation, and to bring it healing."

All who write positively on Christian Science are preserving and perpetuating revelations from God, as the author is attempt-

ing in this book. It is clear that Mrs. Eddy established the Christian Science Publishing Society for exactly this purpose. She never intended it to be used as a bully pulpit for a *Manual-terminated ecclesiastical hierarchy*.

The Human Hatred for Truth

The written word unfolds the Truth, the Word of God, but history is filled with the human hatred for truth. Jerome was attacked for translating the Latin Vulgate, Wyclif and Tyndal for translating Scripture into the English language, Luther for his German translation. John Huss was burned at the stake for his great Christian work.

In an article, "Genuineness of the Scriptures" (*E.O.F.* page 49), Mrs. Eddy writes: "The strongest proof to my mind of the genuineness in the main of the Scriptures is that the views of their writers exposed them to suffering and violent deaths, and yet they held steadfastly to the facts which they recorded. Had they not been honest in their records, they would have been men encountering great suffering in the maintenance of what they knew to be false and by immoral means attempting to establish a cross-bearing Christianity."

Mrs. Eddy, quoting Schumacher, notes that all Jesus' immediate disciples were put to death in the most cruel manner the enemies of Jesus could think up. St. Matthew suffered martyrdom by being slain with a sword at a distant city in Ethiopia. St. Mark expired at Alexandria, after having been cruelly dragged through the streets of that city. St. Luke was hanged upon an olive tree in the classic land of Greece. St. Peter was crucified at Rome, with his head downward. St. James the Greater was beheaded at Jerusalem. St. James the Less was thrown from a lofty pinnacle of the temple, and then beaten to death with a fuller's club. St. Bartholomew was flayed alive. St. Andrew was bound to a cross, whence he preached to his persecutors until he died. St. Thomas was run through the body with a lance at Coromandel, in the West Indies. St. Jude was shot to death with arrows. St. Matthias was first stoned, and then beheaded. St. Barnabas of the Gentiles was stoned to death by the Jews of Sa-

lonica. St. Paul, after various tortures and persecutions, was at length beheaded at Rome by the Emperor Nero. Only the disciple John survived his persecution. Thrown into a caldron of boiling oil, he miraculously escaped death but was afterward banished across the sea to the small lonely island of Patmos.

Thousands of the early Christians were burned at the stake, fed to the lions, crucified, or otherwise barbarously tortured and put to death because of their teachings, such as sexual abstinence, yet this could not dissuade them from following and teaching the Truth.

Then, about three hundred years after the Master's ascension, the healing work Jesus had begun *was* lost from sight. This happened not because of the persecution, but because the bridge the disciples had built to the heathen world—intended to demonstrate the power of the Word to heal—was used by the pagan world (through spiritual ignorance) to undermine true worship, and with it Christian healing.

Christianity, as Jesus taught it, practically came to an end about A.D. 325 when Emperor Constantine, who was a friend of the Christians, convened the Council of Nicaea—an event of highest importance in the history of Christianity. In this Council, Eusebius, the historian, took an active part. Through gross ignorance of what Jesus taught, namely, that each one, rightly seen, is God appearing—since “the kingdom of God is within you”—the Nicaea Council decided that the man, Jesus, *alone* was God, and that the Virgin Mary was the mother of God!

This colossally ignorant deification of Jesus took Jesus away as the consummate example for the salvation of us all. The Council's decision ended Jesus' teaching of man's oneness with God. Without the concrete example of a man *like themselves*, people could no longer understand how they themselves could fulfill Jesus' directive: “Greater works than these shall ye do [when you understand my message and my example].”

Because of this tragic mistake healing all but ceased. Since the time of the Nicaea Council—until Mary Baker Eddy brought the Second Coming of the Christ—people would continue to pray to a God up in the sky instead of understanding that their own true Mind is God.

Whereas the Nicaea Council *deified* Jesus, exactly the oppo-

site happened to Mary Baker Eddy, with much the same result. The elimination of Jesus as the practical Example and Wayshower by deifying him was mirrored by the error which occurred when the scripturally prophesied Woman who brought the Second Coming of the Christ was dismissed as a “little, old lady” rather than being lovingly acknowledged as God’s Divine Messenger to this age.

The ecclesiastical hierarchy took over after Mrs. Eddy departed, in a saga that seems bizarre even by Boston standards. They attempted to separate Mary Baker Eddy from her revelation and divinely appointed mission as the one chosen by God to fulfill scriptural prophecy. In a monotonous and deadening reiteration, those in authority asserted it was *DEIFYING* Mrs. Eddy to give our Leader her rightful place as the one scripturally prophesied to bring the Second Coming of the Christ. Instead they systematically sought to “humanize” her, to make her look entirely “ordinary.” In so far as they have succeeded they have deprived the world of the practical example of her life and Christlike character *ILLUSTRATING THE COINCIDENCE OF THE HUMAN AND DIVINE*.

Error’s attempt to separate Mary Baker Eddy from her revelation nearly succeeded. The understanding of what Mary Baker Eddy *is*, as God’s messenger, had been under siege since 1866. It came under even greater attack after her passing, with the result that Mrs. Eddy is scarcely known today.

The insidious way in which Mary Baker Eddy was practically excommunicated from her own church is documented in the closing chapters of my last book, *Mary Baker Eddy Reveals Your Divinity*. The “humanizing” and trivializing of Mrs. Eddy and the tide of ingratitude and apathy that followed her departure have obscured her as our Wayshower just as effectively as the deification of Jesus obscured him. As a consequence, the wonderful healing ability of Christian Scientists has suffered.

D.C.C. page 124 admonishes: “Attacks on the Discoverer and Founder of Christian Science are attacks on *the Cause itself*. When will you see this, and stop these efforts of animal magnetism to destroy us?...Who will bear this cross?”

Mary Baker Eddy tried to prevent this tragedy—this separat-

ing of her from her revelation—by teaching her students the importance of seeing her true character, seeing the Discoverer and Founder of Christian Science as the scripturally prophesied woman who would bring the Second Coming of the Christ. Seeing our Leader correctly and in her rightful place is crucial because only when we do so can we see ourselves rightly.

The following *Denver (Colorado) News* article, starting on page 89 of *Miscellany* gives a picture of days *I remember* when *every church was full and overflowing*. We even used to go early to get a good seat and pray for the congregation:

"The dedication of the new Mother Church of the Christian Scientists in Boston is not a matter of interest to that city alone, but to the nation; not to the nation alone, but to the world; not to this time alone, but to history.

"The growth of this form of religious faith has been one of the marvels of the last quarter century. It is, in some respects, the greatest religious phenomenon of all history. That a woman should found a religious movement of international sway; that its followers should number many thousands during her lifetime; that hundreds of great buildings should be filled at every meeting Sundays or on week-days with devout worshippers, wooed by no eloquence of orator or magnetic ritual,—all these things are new, utterly new, in the history of religious expression.

"Unaccountable? Hardly so. Whatever else it is, this faith is real and is given very real tests. Thousands upon thousands believe that it has cured them of diseases many and diverse. All the passionate love for life with which nature endows the children of men, grips hold of their faith and insures fidelity in pain or death for self or dear ones. But, while health-seeking is the door to this gospel for many, it is not the only source of appeal. A faith which teaches that hate is atheism, that discord is poisonous, that gloom is sin, has a mission that can be readily grasped by sick or well.

"The world is enormously richer for this reincarnation of the old, old gospel of 'on earth peace, good will toward men.'" (End of article excerpted from *Miscellany*, pages 89-90.)

The incorrect view of our Leader has had a devastating ef-

fect on our churches and on the healing work. After the Leader's leaving, under the withering assault of ecclesiasticism, healing declined, churches emptied, and practitioner lists shriveled.

“In order to love God, we must honor and love the Way. How can we love God unless we love His idea which shows us the way and which is the Way; and in order to honor and love the Way, we must have a true sense of the individual through whom the Way has been manifested to us, else we are not keeping the law to love our neighbor as ourself....Our whole salvation rests upon the manner in which we treat her, since the Way comes to us through her, and God demands that we love our neighbor by having the *spiritual* sense of our neighbor, and the spiritual sense of our Teacher and Mother is God's idea that we must love and honor” (Notes in Laura E. Sargent's handwriting, June 3, 1894).

Mrs. Eddy said, “When a student loses the true sense of me and what I do, he is at the threshold of the plunge so many make into darkness, believing that darkness is a greater light” (*D.C.C.* page 73). Again she said, “When my students become blinded to me as the one through whom Truth has come to this age, they go straight down” (*We Knew Mary Baker Eddy*, No. 2, page 54).

To gain from the example of Jesus and Mary Baker Eddy we must see the deep Christ element in their character, or we do not see the practical link to infinite good which their example and their lives illustrated for us. Mary Baker Eddy—God's witness—well knew that “keeping her true character before the public would help the students and do more than all else for the Cause.” While she was present, her teaching and *example* prodded grateful students to spend every available moment in the study of Science and Health, and practicing its teaching on themselves and others. In this way millions were healed during Mrs. Eddy's sojourn with us.

Mrs. Eddy had to overcome incredible difficulties to bring humanity the Second Coming of the Christ. Are we truly grateful for the blessing she bestowed upon us in revealing our spiritual individuality that has been ours “since before Abraham was”—in fact, from all eternity?

We are pleased today to see a higher, more spiritual trend of thought among those in positions of authority and a greater willingness to acknowledge our Leader, as evidenced by the publishing of the Bliss Knapp book and the proposed restoration to the Reading Rooms of authentic biographies such as those by Irving Tomlinson and Adam Dickey, and by the improvement in articles appearing in the Christian Science periodicals. Still, the tentative murmurings of gratitude and recognition toward Mary Baker Eddy, expressed by Christian Scientists today, are but a faint echo of the feeling that prevailed in the movement at the turn of the century, as we saw in the previously quoted *Denver News* article.

That was a time of great activity in Christian Science, with deep and heartfelt reverence for our Leader openly expressed.* It's a shame that today the testimonies in our periodicals are lacking in this reverence and gratitude towards our beloved Leader, who has made this healing truth possible.

“Oh, may we all learn the healing power of a grateful heart! It lights the dark places, revives the drooping courage and enables its possessor to commune with angels. It enables us to see our brother's face as the face of God; this is the true achievement.”

Mary Baker Eddy's revelation is the death knell to evil and error. The enemy's prime objective and goal has always been to

*It was also a time when quack medicines, such as Lydia E. Pinkham's cure for female difficulties, were peddled everywhere. There is story about a young Mary McCloskey, a devout Irish Catholic, who was suffering from the fact that the only house of worship within reach of her new place of employment was a Christian Science church. Feeling a great need to worship, she finally decided to attend a service there. On her return her employer asked how she enjoyed the Christian Science service.

“Faith,” said Mary, “It was mighty square. After a dozen people got up and said how grateful they were to Mary Baker Eddy for all she had done for them, I thought I, too, must express gratitude, so I got up and told them what Lydia E. Pinkham had done for me.”

ate her from her revelation. This intent of animal magnetism must be whipped out of the temple.

Let us take up our cross and defend our Leader. Let us lay bare the error and never fear the consequences. Recognizing Mary Baker Eddy and her rightful place will restore the healing ability of Christian Scientists. Her writings contain the truth that reveals our oneness with infinite good. It delivers us from matter and takes us out of the flesh. God speed the inheritance this divinely prophesied mighty woman with a mighty revelation has given mankind; and may it kindle all minds with a gleam of gratitude.

Patience in Tribulation

On page 228 of *Miscellaneous Documents Relating to Christian Science* is an article by Carolyn D. Noyes stating: "The great red dragon alluded to in the twelfth chapter [of Revelation] typifies the mental malpractice or malicious animal magnetism directed against Mary Baker Eddy and her works, and against her students. It explains something of the difficulties which she and they had to overcome." For Mrs. Eddy, every forward step was cross-bearing and crucifixion; but she knew "the foundation stone, that had been rejected, was Love and that we can build on none other."

Mary Baker Eddy suffered great privations. "God took away everything from me," she said. "I had nothing to cling to materially.... I did not understand Science and Health when I wrote it. I would write just as fast as I could; I would have to do so; could not help. The desire to write would begin in the morning...and leave in afternoon. I would not stop for [lunch] when writing."

The Second Coming of the Christ could come through Mary Baker Eddy because she was willing to give up *all* for the Truth. Her father told her that if she disgraced the family with Science she "should never darken his door again." Her sisters would not speak to her. And though she loved them dearly she would lay all up to faithfully pursue the Truth. As she wrote:

Jesus, I my cross have taken,
 All to leave and follow thee.
 Naked, poor, despised, forsaken,
 Thou from hence my all shall be.
 Perish every fond ambition
 All I've sought or hoped or known,
 Yet how rich is my condition,
 God and heaven are still my own.
 Let the world despise and leave me,
 They have left my Saviour too;
 Human hearts and looks deceive me
 Thou art not like them, untrue.
 Oh, while Thou dost smile upon me,
 God of wisdom, Love, and might,
 Foes may hate and friends disown me,
 Show Thy face and all is bright.

“To have faith requires *COURAGE*, the ability to take a risk, the readiness even to accept pain and disappointment. Whoever insists on safety and security as primary conditions of life cannot have faith. To love and to be loved needs courage, the courage to judge certain values as of ultimate concern—and to take the jump and stake everything on these values” (Erich Fromm, *The Art of Loving*).

No one since Christ Jesus has so faithfully remained loyal to finite good, in spite of the world's hatred. Mrs. Eddy was very poor in the early days when she gave all her time without pay to giving, recording, and demonstrating the practical truths of Christian Science. When she was sometimes hungry, there would be a knock at the door. She would see no one, but there would be a loaf of bread or some other needed supply on the steps.

In those days “the fixedness of mortal illusions and the hatred of Truth” caused the world to reject Mrs. Eddy's great spiritual revelation. But slowly, in spite of the eons of false educational material views, humanity's response became more like an infant learning to dance. The circus and the side shows of mortal

mind caused continual distraction; nevertheless steady progress was made as long as Mrs. Eddy was here to handle animal magnetism, and while a proper view of her was maintained by her students and her church. This is what “the remnant [which is] very small and feeble,” is trying today to restore.

Centuries, however, may pass before the world fully comprehends the love for humanity shown in the courage and steadfastness that brought us the “Comforter.” Mary Baker Eddy stood alone with God against every evil that tried to thwart her. She worked and toiled indefatigably against every disadvantage. Even her friends were enemies to her cause, and she had to seclude herself from the very people who could have helped her. But, though she received no support from the bleachers, she rose ever higher, as Love flowed in to compensate her for the surrender of all that earth held dear.

Our Leader told Julia Bartlett that every day divine truth was revealed to her, but there was no one among her students who would understand it. She, like our Master, could say, “I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now.” She was so far above the world that she was utterly alone in it, and sometimes felt that loneliness and would express the desire for the time to come when she could voice the Truth she saw.

Mrs. Eddy saw that her solitude was an inevitable part of her birth into Spirit. “The passage from sense to Soul [to true identity, spiritual understanding] is one which interests us all and in which we must each take part. In this passage from sense to Soul we have to give up everything for Christ. We cannot carry our material sense of things with us, father, mother, wife, husband, children, all things” (*D.C.C.*, page 33). But she also knew that when we give up everything for Christ, in order to gain every good thing, we are only giving up falsehoods we have been entertaining. When we get the right idea of father, mother, husband, wife, child, we will never lose them, but all that is of a fleshly nature—born of the flesh—will be taken from us.

As we follow in our Leader’s footsteps and turn away from the rewards of this world, our experience will be like that of the stock-

broker who had made millions of dollars for an Arabian oil sheik. The sheik was so pleased he offered her rubies, gold and a silver-plated Rolls-Royce. She declined the gifts, telling him she had merely done her job. But the sheik insisted.

“Well,” the woman said, “I’ve recently taken up golf. A set of golf clubs would be a fine gift.”

Weeks went by. One morning the stockbroker received a letter from the sheik.

“So far I have bought you three golf clubs,” the letter said, “but I hope you will not be disappointed because only two have swimming pools.”

“Heirs of God and joint heirs with Christ, we are inheritors where there is no division of estate.” In our wholeness in Mind—our marriage to God—our bounty is endless. We are all destined to learn that nothing is too good for infinite good’s man.

The Uses of Adversity

There can be no doubt that our Leader passed through troughs of despair, even though she knew there was no desire she could hope for, from the infinitesimal to the infinite, that was not to be found within herself. No one else on earth could have withstood the insidious wickedness that continually struck at Mrs. Eddy’s life, attempting to incapacitate and even kill her, and that struck at Dr. Eddy to deprive her of valued help, and that later struck viciously at her secretary, Calvin Frye, her invaluable helper for 28 years. The weight of anguish, the scalding tears, the bitter searing to the core of love, weighed heavily on Mary Baker Eddy.

Recalling the early days, Clara Choate writes, “Often error would strike at Dr. Eddy and cause them both trials too severe to recapitulate. No matter how high or wonderful were her demonstrations supporting and proving her God understanding, the world did not then accept her personally nor her advanced revelations [just as nineteen centuries earlier they did not accept Jesus’ glorious demonstrations]. Mrs. Eddy’s every step was cross-bearing and crucifix-

ion. [If mental torture, enmity, and hostility did not come one way, they came another.]

“Mrs. Eddy, in voicing the revelations [that came from God] was constantly misquoted to the hindrance of her work. The manuscript would be mislaid, wrong days and dates for appointments, and other like troubles had to be met....The enemy stood ready to oppose the most spiritual revelations, and the use for which God intended them. To be off guard meant disaster. The cares were endless. [Just think of the time Dr. Eddy was accused of murdering Mr. Spofford, an accusation hatched by envious students to hurt Mrs. Eddy. Think of the three months of living hell that ordeal must have caused. It was, no doubt, a cause of Dr. Eddy’s early death.]

“...Only [because of] Mrs. Eddy’s obedience to God could the work have been accomplished. In the years that Dr. Eddy was with her, she and Dr. Eddy were ever the watchman on the wall. [They stood alone against the resisting world and the wedges evil tried to drive in as it barreled down upon them in its effort to disturb and destroy the divine work.] It cost sleepless nights and harrowing days to guard against the enemy in this priceless labor for Christian Science.”

Mrs. Eddy knew that her mission was wholly apart from the things of sense, and that it presented only those things that belong alone to God. Writing in 1893 she said, “The past three years of my life have been, if known, a continual martyrdom. But I am not *afraid*, as my day is, so shall my strength be.” She could as accurately have said the past quarter of a century had been a continual martyrdom.

Nearing the end of her sojourn with us, when her son was persuaded to sue her for money in the “Next Friend’s” suit, Mrs. Eddy said, “I am now being punished for the fruits of my first marriage.” Yet after the suit was over, she commented, “When these things cease to bless they will cease to occur” (*My*. 143:23). In this case the blessing came after she left the human scene, in this wise:

During the “Next Friends” suit the court, in deference to her age, appointed three Masters to take her testimony. On the 14th of August the Masters, with senior counsel on each side, came, by ap-

pointment, to call on Mrs. Eddy. She received them with grace and dignity and throughout the whole ordeal of their examination bore herself with engaging sincerity and simplicity. Although initially her interrogators were antagonistic, during their visit the atmosphere changed and they came away saying, “That woman is sharper than a steel trap.”

Now, what was “the blessing” in all this?

After Mrs. Eddy said “Good-bye,” the five Directors, who had illegally remained in the saddle *even though the Manual had terminated them*, tried to make the field believe that Mary Baker Eddy was non compos mentis when she wrote the By-Law terminating the five-member Board. But, as explained in my previous books, this attempt did not fly, because the court itself had already proven that Mary Baker Eddy was mentally sound *at the time* she wrote the estoppels in the *Manual*.

Naught but the self-conscious grandeur of clearing the way for others’ happiness and the presence divine could have sustained the sacrifices Mrs. Eddy made. Only complete honesty of heart, a deep desire for perfect understanding, a fearless nature, and the absolute conviction that she was right enabled Mrs. Eddy to press on.

Even in her last years Mrs. Eddy was willing to suffer the crucifixion of sorrow and distress. Animated by the desire to obey God and to bless mankind, she was motivated to make untold sacrifices, including the ultimate one.

While at Pleasant View, her beloved home, she said to Henrietta Chanfrau, “Henrietta, if I ever go away from here to another house, it will be to be delivered up to my enemies!” But no sacrifice was too great for Mrs. Eddy. So full, so great was her love for poor suffering humanity that in her 87th year she *did* leave dear Pleasant View to leap into the crucible of affliction. After her experience with newspapers during the “Next Friends” suit, seeing the critical need for responsible journalism, she returned to Boston to establish the *Christian Science Monitor*. There in Boston, as she had foreseen, she was delivered up to her enemies—delivered to those who were on the watch, waiting for her to die so they could take over the flour-

ishing and highly respected world-wide Christian Science movement.

“‘Sweet are the uses of adversity.’ The gospel of Christ was a Gospel of Glory that could not have been given except through suffering....Take His cup, darling, drink and give thanks. ‘Tribulation worketh patience, and patience experience, and experience hope.’” Tribulation (His cup) awakens the sinner from his dream of sin and hastens his marriage to infinite good, God.



Mrs. Eddy in her carriage



CHAPTER XI

THE WOMAN OF PROPHECY

Woman Must Unseal the Book

Today humanity stands on the threshold of a mental overturning unparalleled in human history. This hour was prophesied by Jesus when he said there would be “upon earth distress of nations with perplexity [and dire calamities]” (Luke 21:25). But he followed with hope and encouragement: “...then shall they see the Son of Man [the expression of your own God Mind, in its totality of intelligence and spiritual understanding and Love] coming in the clouds of great power and glory...” (Mark 13:26,27).

In the history of Christian Science there has never been a time when we as Christian Scientists needed more to hear the voice within—to know there is nothing external or outside our own consciousness. The battlefield is within our consciousness; that is where victory is found. “Undisturbed amid the jarring testimony of the material senses, Science, [the Second Coming of the Christ, brought by her whose history is a holy one] still enthroned, is unfolding to mortals the immutable, harmonious divine Principle...ever present and eternal” (S&H 306:25).

In Chapter V:1 of Revelation, we read: “And I saw in the right hand of him that sat on the throne a book written within and on the backside, sealed with seven seals.” In the seventh picture in *Christ and Christmas*, the clock points to 5:05. As Judge Hanna explains, this might refer to Revelation 5:5. Revelation 5:3 tells us “no man in heaven nor in earth neither under the earth, was able to open the book, neither to look thereon.” If no *man* can open or unseal it, then only *woman* can unseal it—the woman who is the feminine repre-

sentative of the Christ. In Revelation X, this woman appears as a “mighty angel;” in her hand is the book she has written. In his Revelation to St. John, Jesus prophesied (Rev. 12:1, 2, & 5) the coming of the woman of the Apocalypse—the God-crowned woman, Mary Baker Eddy, who would bring the Second Coming of the Christ, revealing that our own real Mind is the infinite good we call God—the kingdom of God within our consciousness.

Jesus had opened up and explained the Old Testament, but until Mrs. Eddy came, the New Testament was a sealed book. Remember, at the time Mrs. Eddy made her great discovery—the discovery that evil and error are unreal and that God, infinite good, is your own real Mind—almost the entire world believed that God was a man up in the sky, and that there was a heaven for some and everlasting punishment for others. In 1866 Mrs. Eddy stood absolutely *alone* in her convictions that only good is real. But in bringing the Second Coming of the Christ, her teaching has—in the past century and a quarter, in spite of cruel world-wide opposition—largely done away with many of the false notions of Old Theology.

The life of our Leader must at length be seen as fulfilling Scripture. Mrs. Eddy must be recognized as the woman prophesied in the Apocalypse—the woman who brought the Second Coming of the Christ.

When Genesis I:16 & 17 says: “God made two great lights, it is referring to the teachings of the First and Second Coming of the Christ—to the teachings of Christ Jesus and Mary Baker Eddy—and when it says that “he set them in the firmament of heaven to give light upon the earth,” it is speaking in symbols. Mrs. Eddy tells us spiritual teaching must always be by symbols (S&H 575:14). “Firmament” (S&H 586:15) means “spiritual understanding” which at the time of Jesus no one but Jesus had. John 1:5 tells us that Jesus’ great light shone “in the darkness.” Jesus was shunned by the religious powers of his day, and was finally crucified “because of the shocking human idolatry that presupposes life, substance, Soul, and intelligence in matter—which is the antipode of God, and yet governs mankind” (No. 35:17).

But enough light shown across the darkness of the centuries so that Mary Baker Eddy, in the Second Coming of the Christ, could explain and demonstrate *HOW* Jesus did his mighty works. When the great revelation of Life in and of Spirit came to her, she began where Jesus left off, building on his foundations. “Christian Science...brings the glories of eternity; ‘for other foundations can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ’”(No. 21:20). Like Jesus, Mrs. Eddy “rent the veil” that hides from us our true identity, our divinity.

In (*Mis.* 320:27) we read: “The star of Bethlehem is the star of Boston, high in the zenith of Truth’s domain, that looketh down on the long night of human beliefs, to pierce the darkness and melt the dawn.” In (*My.* 110) we have the hopeful message: “At the present time the Bethlehem star looks down upon the long night of materialism,—material religion, material medicine, a material world; and it ‘shineth in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not.’ But the day will dawn and the daystar will appear, lighting the gloom, guiding the steps of progress from molecule and mortals outward and upward in the scale of being.”

Mrs. Eddy Makes Clear She Fulfilled Scriptural Prophecy

One cannot separate the revelation from the revelator. Through Mary Baker Eddy’s writings we get a glimpse into the true nature of the woman through whom God has given the world the full and final revelation of the Christ that Jesus personified. Jesus and Mary Baker Eddy show us what is possible to the human in the way of divine character and that *true* humanhood is sinless. Mrs. Eddy was urgent that we see her rightful place. In no other way can *we* see our rightful place.

We are grateful to the father of R. Conwell Shoup who in the early 1930s persuaded the Christian Science Board of Directors to appoint a “Committee of Editors” to search the archives “for what Mrs. Eddy thought herself to be.” This committee of six included

three members who were positive Mrs. Eddy was *not* the prophesied woman of the Apocalypse, and three who were positive *she was*. After several years of researching all material available, all six were convinced that Mrs. Eddy did consider herself to be the “woman.” They presented the Board with 57 pages of written evidence demonstrating this fact. In an article in the *Journal* and in the June 5, 1943 *Sentinel* these 57 pages were reduced to the six points, which were later printed in a pamphlet entitled “Mrs. Eddy’s Place.”*

The author of this book has made several (unsuccessful) attempts to obtain a copy of the original 57 pages; but actually we don’t need them. Mary Baker Eddy makes her place in Biblical prophecy plain in her writings. For instance:

1. In her Science and Health chapter “The Apocalypse,” the scriptural note states: “the time is at hand.”

2. On page 546:18 she tells us, “Genesis and the Apocalypse...contain the deep divinity of the Bible”—Genesis because it tells us that all has already been made and it is perfect; and the Apocalypse because it tells of the prophesied woman and of the “little book” which we know is Science and Health.

3. S&H, page 559:30, states that Revelation’s twelfth chapter, concerning the woman, has “a special suggestiveness in connection with the *NINETEENTH CENTURY*.”

4. S&H, page 560:3 says: “In the opening of the sixth seal, typical of six thousand years since Adam, the distinctive feature has reference to the *PRESENT AGE*.”

5. Page 560:16-19 bears the marginal heading: “*TRUE ESTIMATE OF GOD’S MESSENGER*,” another reference to Mary Baker Eddy. Here we are told how important it is to have a right estimate of “anyone whom God has appointed to voice His Word”; and that “without a correct sense of its highest *VISIBLE* idea [Mary Baker Eddy],

*This pamphlet was originally published by the Christian Science Publishing Society and is now available from Aequus Institute, 250 W. First St., Ste. 330, Claremont, CA 91711, or from the Mary Baker Eddy Institute, 2100 Third Ave., #2601, Seattle, WA 98121.

we can never understand the divine Principle”—the divine Principle that revelation told her we are.

Persecuting those who voice the divine idea can hide this idea, she tells us.

6. Science and Health, page 561:10 informs us: “The Revelator saw also the spiritual ideal as a *WOMAN* clothed in light, a bride.” “The hour is come; the bride (Word) [Mary Baker Eddy’s writings] is adorned [Mary Baker Eddy conceived ‘man in the idea of God’]” (*My*. 125:26).

7. This Bride, Word, comes from heaven (harmony, the reign of Spirit) and is wedded to the Lamb of Love, Jesus’ teachings. The bride is the Word *individually available in all its parts to all*; hence it alone germinates the Tree of Life in each individual consciousness, bearing its twelve manner of fruits—“conceiving man [generic man] in the idea of God” (S&H 582:14). Mrs. Eddy tells us that “in divine revelation, material and corporeal selfhood disappear, and the spiritual idea is understood” (561:20).

8. “The woman in the Apocalypse *SYMBOLIZES* generic man, the spiritual idea of God” (S&H 561:22). Generic man is God, since “Principle and its idea is one, *and this one is God*” (S&H 465:17). Mrs. Eddy states that “This immaculate idea, represented first by man [Jesus] and according to the Revelator, last by woman [Mary Baker Eddy], will baptize with fire; and the fiery baptism will burn up the chaff of error with the fervent heat of Truth and Love, melting and purifying even the gold of *HUMAN CHARACTER*” (S&H 565:18).

9. Mary Baker Eddy further identifies herself as the woman when she says (page 562:24): “Also the spiritual idea is typified by: a woman in travail, waiting to be delivered of her sweet promise, but remembering no more her sorrow for joy that the birth goes on; for great is the idea, and the travail portentous” (S&H 562:24).

10. She identifies herself again on page 118:6, when she speaks of Jesus’ parable of the woman who hid the leaven in three measures of meal, and asks: “Did not this parable point a moral with a prophecy, foretelling the *SECOND APPEARING IN THE FLESH* of the Christ, Truth, hidden in sacred secrecy from the visible

world?”—The Christ, Truth came with the “little book,” Science and Health, prophesied by Jesus to St. John, Revelation 10:2.

11. In *Miscellany*, page 346:29, Mary Baker Eddy again identifies herself as the woman, when she tells us: “...the manhood and womanhood of God have already been revealed...through Christ Jesus and Christian Science [with which the woman, Mary Baker Eddy, is one] His two *witnesses*.”

12. She further identifies herself with every picture in her book *Christ and Christmas* (except the 8th). *Christ and Christmas* represents the various editions of Science and Health from the first to the last. It presents the orderly process by which Christian Science is unfolded—first to Mrs. Eddy’s consciousness, and then through her to the human consciousness. Alice Orgain states: “The progressive revisions of Science and Health were interwoven into the seamless vesture of Truth, which revisions as gathered into a whole in our last edition identify Mrs. Eddy as the ‘adorned’ bride, or Word that has progressed to ‘the city of our God, which has no boundary nor limit’; for the bride is the ‘adorned’ (completed) Word. And nothing short of the boundless Word is the second scroll, the Message of Womanhood.”

13. When Mrs. Eddy writes: “Those who look for me in person, or elsewhere than in my writings, lose me instead of find me” (*My*. 120:2), she directly identifies herself with the Message of the Woman, and hence with the woman herself.

The Destiny of the “Little Book”

Mrs. Eddy knew that the time is coming, and it is not far off, when all potentates together with every mortal man and woman within their domains shall bow before the “little book” whose right foot is set upon the sea, and whose left foot is on the earth, and whose hands compass the universe.

Why did she know this? Because it is the Word of God, the Mind, Spirit, and Soul of man, of you. Therefore, while it would be wonderful to have the 57 pages supporting it’s scribe’s scriptural mandate, we actually have, in her *own published writings*, all the facts

needed to identify her as fulfilling the prophecy of the woman of the Apocalypse.

Mary Baker Eddy did not just *symbolize* the God crowned woman. Her revealing consciousness *WAS* that God-crowned woman. She did not *symbolize* the “mighty angel” in Revelation X; she *WAS* that “mighty angel” that had in its hand a “little book.” Her role was like that of Jesus. Jesus did not *symbolize* the man the prophets foretold as born in Bethlehem of a virgin; he *WAS* that man, and he said so plainly, as when he told the man healed of blindness (regarding the “Son of God”): “Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee” (John IX:27).

Mary Baker Eddy’s place—like that of Jesus—was divinely ordained from the beginning. No one could take her place. No one else could have written the book; it was *sealed until the woman wrote it*. In the textbook’s Chapter 6, entitled “Science, Theology, Medicine,” the first three pages tell us of her great discovery of the Christ Science, or the laws of Life, Truth, and Love. “In following the leadings of scientific revelation,” she states, “the Bible was my only textbook. The Scriptures were illumined; reason and revelation were reconciled, and afterwards the truth of Christian Science was demonstrated. No human pen nor tongue taught me the Science contained in this book, SCIENCE AND HEALTH; and neither tongue nor pen can overthrow it.”

On page 147:14 we read, “Although this volume contains the complete Science of Mind-healing, never believe that you can absorb the whole meaning of the Science by a simple *perusal* of this book. The book needs to be *studied*, and the demonstration of the rules of scientific healing will plant you firmly on the spiritual groundwork of Christian Science. This proof lifts you high above the perishing fossils of theories already antiquated, and enables you to grasp the spiritual facts of being hitherto unattained and seemingly dim.”

In Mrs. Eddy’s book, *Christ and Christmas*, the poems and paintings tell the story of Mrs. Eddy’s life—the life of the “one lone brave star” that shone “o’er the grim night of chaos.” In picture No. 1, we find the “star of Bethlehem.” This “star of Bethlehem is the

star of Boston, high in the zenith of Truth's domain, that looketh down on the long night of human beliefs, to pierce the darkness and melt the dawn" (*Mis.* 320:23).

Regarding *Christ and Christmas* Mrs. Eddy said, "This Poem and its illustrations are the same as my other works on Christian Science—fresh from the spirit of inspiration. Those who criticize them seem to know neither me nor the divine Principle that is revealing itself to this age" (Letter to Augusta Stetson).

God's Two Witnesses

Jesus and Mary Baker Eddy were God's two witnesses. In the vision of Zechariah 4:1-5, 11-14, a discerning spiritual description of these two witnesses is given. The scene is made of gold, a symbol of God. A candlestick with a bowl on top is surrounded by seven lamps and seven pipes. On either side are two olive trees which empty golden oil out of themselves. We are told that the olive trees are the two anointed ones who stand by the Lord of the whole earth. The two witnesses which are the two olive trees are seen again in Revelation 11:3, 4.

Daniel also saw the two anointed ones. He tells us: "Then I Daniel looked, and behold, there stood another two, the one on this side of the bank of the river, and the other on that side of the bank of the river" (Dan. 12:5). In Revelation 22:1, 2, the two anointed ones, Christ Jesus and Mary Baker Eddy, are seen as the tree of life, one on each side of the river—offering us salvation as a gift and not a labor. "Jesus said, 'Fear not, little flock, for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom.' This truth is Christian Science" (S&H 442:27).

Science and Health teaches us that God's creation is complete. After infinite good "created" everything, there was nothing left that needed to be created. From then on, everything was *revelation*. This was certainly true of God's two witnesses, Jesus and Mary Baker Eddy. Scripture tells us their place in the divine plan existed from the beginning. It also describes mankind's millennia

of preparation before Jesus and Mary Baker Eddy could appear to human consciousness to unfold their revelation.

Peter recognized Jesus' eternal God-being when he said, "Thou art the Christ" (Mark 8:29). We must see as Peter saw—see each other as God in disguise, as God, appearing as individual being, without beginning or end. This was true of Jesus and Mary Baker Eddy and it is true of us all when correctly seen. Jesus and Mrs. Eddy were our great examples. What is true of them is equally true of you and me, in reality. When we fail to see Jesus' place and Mary Baker Eddy's place in divine Love—which is also our place—we shut ourselves out from the light that Scripture and Mrs. Eddy's writings shed on humanity. In Science, each has always had all. "The kingdom is within" each of us.

Consider what Scripture has to tell us about these Wayshowers. The woman of Samaria at the well discerned who Jesus was, and asked: "Is not this the Christ?" (John 4:29). When Jesus asked the man born blind whom he had healed, "Dost thou believe on the Son of God?" the man answered and said, "Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him?" and Jesus told him, "Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee." To Philip, Jesus said, "He that hath seen me hath seen the Father [the true Mind of man]" (John 14:9). To the Pharisees, Jesus said, "He that believeth on me, believeth not on me, but on Him that sent me, And he that seeth me seeth Him that sent me" (John 12:44, 45).

In the Second Coming of the Christ, Mrs. Eddy could have answered as Jesus answered, "He that [correctly] seeth me, seeth him that sent me." Prophecies concerning Jesus and Mary Baker Eddy are found throughout the Bible.

In Matthew 1:1 we find "The book of the generations of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham." In Genesis 12:1 and 3, we read, "Now the Lord had said unto Abraham, Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and from thy father's house unto a land that I will give thee....in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed." This certainly fits what both Jesus and Mrs. Eddy were called upon to do. This is also what we are called upon

to do.

The Bible also has a number of prophecies that can be seen prophesying of Mary Baker Eddy and Science and Health, among which are: Micah 5:2-3; Zechariah 4:11-14; Isaiah 54 (entire chapter); Matthew 13:33; John 14:16-17, 26 & 16:7-14; Revelation 11:3-4; Revelation 10:1, 2; Revelation 12.

Many passages tell of Mary Baker Eddy's work on earth. Genesis continues: "The scepter shall not depart from Judah, nor a lawgiver between his feet, until Shiloh [home, heaven] come; and unto him [Mary Baker Eddy's work on earth] shall the gathering of the people be." Micah states: "But thou, Bethlehem Ephrathah, though thou be little...yet out of thee shall he come forth unto me that is to be ruler in Israel; whose goings forth have been from of old, from everlasting. Therefore will he give them up, until the time that *SHE WHICH TRAVAILETH* hath brought forth" (5:2, 3).

Because of the nature of their holy work on earth, Jesus and Mary Baker Eddy are presented together in a number of prophecies. Christ Jesus himself prophesied that "the Comforter"—the writings and life-work of Mary Baker Eddy—"which is the Holy Ghost [Science]...shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you" (John 14:26). Thus in Isaiah we read: "I the Lord have called thee in righteousness, and will hold thine hand, and will keep thee, and give thee for a covenant of the people, for a light to the Gentiles; to open the blind eyes, to bring out the prisoners from the prison and them that sit in darkness out of the prison house" (Isaiah 42: 6, 7). We see that this prophecy of Jesus also foretells of Mary Baker Eddy who brought the Second Coming of the Christ to open our eyes and lead us out of our imprisonment in the illusion of matter.

To see God's two witnesses rightly we must see from divine Love's point of view. Mortal mind saw Jesus only as a carpenter's son, not the Son of God. It saw Mary Baker Eddy only as the daughter of a New England farmer, and not as one with God, having the Mind of God. Regarding mortal mind's view of her she said, "Those who look for me in person, or elsewhere than in my writings, lose me instead of find me" (*My*. 120:2). When Jesus read from the

book of Isaiah (see Luke 4:16-21) concerning the prophecy of his coming, he said: "This day is this scripture fulfilled in your ears." Mrs. Eddy could have said the same regarding the many prophecies in Scripture concerning her. She did not *publicly* say these things in her time because she would have been crucified, there was still such resistance to her and her mission.

Jeremiah 33:16 saw rightly when he said, "In those days shall Judah be saved, and Jerusalem [home, heaven] shall dwell safely: and this is the name whereby *she* shall be called, [namely] *The Lord our righteousness.*" The robes of heaven are righteousness. Jeremiah 31:22 prophesied, "The Lord hath created a new thing in the earth, *A woman shall compass a man*"—shall include all the teachings of Christ Jesus.

Janet Coleman relates an experience, preserved in *Documents*, page 53: "I was getting into bed, had not laid down, when at the foot of the bed I saw Jesus' form rise up in white, then our Leader in white rose up beside him. She put out her arms and embraced him. He melted into her, then she rose up beyond my gaze....I came down to Boston a short time after and I went to see our Leader at Commonwealth Avenue....I told Mrs. Eddy I had something to tell her....After I finished, she told me not to speak of it to anyone, not even to her students; it was too far beyond the age at that time. When *Christ and Christmas* came out, the picture "Christian Unity" expressed more [of the vision] I saw in Chicago."

"Revelation is history written in advance." It is an *UNFOLDING OF WHAT ALREADY EXISTS* in infinite good's creation. (See Mrs. Eddy's interesting references to "unfold" and "unfolding.") Because we have God's two witnesses in Revelation, they must also be in Genesis. In the fourth day of creation we read: "And God made two great lights, the greater light to rule the day and the lesser light to rule the night" (Gen. 1:16).

The two lights are to be rulers (this accords with the prophecy of Micah 5:2, that out of Bethlehem should come a ruler of Israel). These two great lights rule through Christ and Christian Science. Just as Jesus was inseparable from the Christ, so Mrs.

Eddy was inseparable from Christian Science, and since each revelation must include all that preceded it, Christian Science must include all that Christ Jesus taught.

Mary Baker Eddy tells us “the impersonation of the spiritual idea had a brief history in the earthly life of our Master; but ‘of his kingdom there shall be no end,’ for Christ, God’s idea will eventually rule all nations and peoples—imperatively, absolutely, finally, with divine Science. This immaculate idea, represented first by man and, according to the Revelator, last by woman, will baptize with fire; and the fiery baptism will burn up the chaff of error with the fervent heat of Truth and Love, melting and purifying even the gold of human character” (S&H 565:13).

The Comforter Jesus Promised

In John 14:16 Jesus promised: “I will pray the Father [Mind] and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you *forever*.” Mrs. Eddy explains: “This Comforter I understand to be Divine Science” (S&H 55:28). “Love fulfills the law of Christian Science, and nothing short of this divine Principle *understood and demonstrated* can furnish the vision of the Apocalypse, open the seven seals of error with Truth, or uncover the myriad illusions of sin, sickness, and death. Under the supremacy of Spirit, it will be seen and acknowledged that *matter must disappear*” (S&H 572:12).

Jesus’ Revelation to St. John unfolds an interesting feature, in the account of the woman *God-crowned*. A crown signifies rulership; here it represents rulership over the entire world. This woman symbolizes generic man, the collective reflection of God. As God sent Jesus to present the Christ, the idea of God that is one with Principle, so God sent Woman to present the *generic* man of infinite good’s creating. The prophesied woman, as God’s messenger, “brought forth a man child [a book, Science and Health] who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron.”

What do these words mean? Simply that this book will teach

us how to “[make ourselves] the Son of God”—how to make ourself *WHOLE*—by teaching us that our own Mind is God and therefore has “sovereign power to think and act rightly.” The divine Mind that is our Mind, being All, can only unfold itself as itself to itself. This is our true selfhood, our Christ selfhood that is Truth. The little book gives us the knowledge of God and God’s law. And when we are living from the divine standpoint we *are* the divine law. Divine law constitutes man, and, as Mrs. Eddy tells us in the first edition, it is the operation of the Principle you are. What is written in *the “little book” will be realized as divine law*, and so “rule all nations [all states of thought, just as the law of gravity rules] imperatively, absolutely, finally [with the Mind of God, infinite good]” (S&H 565:16).

Truth’s Final Appearing

“The second appearing of Jesus is, unquestionably, the spiritual advent of the advancing idea of God, as in Christian Science” (*Ret.* 70:20). But the scripturally prophesied “God-crowned woman,” the “mighty angel” that brought the “little book,” had to come in the flesh, just as the prophesied Virgin who gave birth to Jesus had to come in the flesh, and the prophesied Jesus had to come in the flesh, or what good would they have done suffering humanity seeking hope in a world of hurt? There had to be a *ME-DIATOR* between Spirit and the flesh.

Every Christian Scientist should clearly understand that *IF MARY BAKER EDDY IS NOT THE WOMAN OF THE APOCALYPSE, THEN CHRISTIAN SCIENCE IS NOT THE FINAL APPEARING OF THE CHRIST, TRUTH*. But Jesus and the prophets foretold and prophesied the coming of the woman of the Apocalypse—which would reveal to us our marriage to God, and this scriptural prophecy has *come to pass*. In Numbers 11:29, Moses said, “Would God that all the Lord’s people were prophets.” Then all would know who it was who walked among us in the 19th century and the first decade of the 20th.

The book of Revelation could only be understood *AFTER* the appearing of Mary Baker Eddy. The prophecy of the woman of the Apocalypse could only be understood *AFTER* Mary Baker Eddy had fulfilled Jesus' prophecy, and the prophecies of the Old Testament prophets, concerning her. There is no way it could have been understood until she appeared and brought the Second Coming of the Christ. Chapters 14, 15, & 16 of St. John's Gospel telling of the "Comforter" that Jesus promised, could not be understood until Mary Baker Eddy *came and brought the "Comforter,"* the Second Coming of the Christ.

Although not fully understood, these prophecies, like those foretelling the advent of Jesus, were vitally important. The spiritually endowed prophets—the faithful servants of God—foresaw and so clearly described God's "two Anointed Ones" that when these Anointed Ones did appear, the people were forced to recognize them.

Think of how Jesus leaned on the testimony of the prophets who foretold his coming. The question may be asked, when Jesus walked to Emmaus with his disciples, would they have finally recognized him if he had not recalled to them all that the faithful spiritually-minded prophets had foretold of him—of his virgin birth, his rejection, crucifixion, and resurrection?

Our beloved Leader saw that this recognition of herself in relation to Biblical prophecy was essential as well. A stirring parallel is related in the *We Knew Mary Baker Eddy* series, Volume 2, page 53-54, in the section titled, "An Intimate Picture of our Leader's Final Class." (italics added)

"Judge Hanna got up, and it was one of the most heart-rending things I ever heard in my life, as he said: 'Mother, let me tell you this. Sometimes all the machinations of evil that are conceivable to the human mind seem to be hurled at us, and sometimes for days the world seems black. Every argument that the ingenuity of evil can suggest whispers trying to hide your mission, and *the light returns only when we see you as you are—the revelator of this Truth.*'

"Others spoke on the same line. It was the most beautiful thing, and you see that *had to be brought out. She had to be ac-*

known, and yet while they were speaking you have never seen such humility, such self-effacement, in your life. And then she said, according to my recollection: 'My dear children, if you had not seen it, I should have had to teach you this [just as Jesus had to teach those on the way to Emmaus]. I could not have avoided telling you that when my students become blinded to me as the one through whom Truth has come in this age, they go straight down. I would have had to tell you.' (The present edition says, 'they miss the path,' but the original says, "they go straight down.")"

The God-inspired Old Testament prophets, as well as Jesus, foresaw the coming of the woman of the Apocalypse, and their prophetic foretelling of the woman forestalled and precluded attempts to vanquish it with doubts. The prophets put the seal of divinity and eternity upon the Second Coming of the Christ, just as they had put the seal on the First Coming of the Christ with Jesus.

The Importance of Understanding Prophecy

Why is it so important to understand both the prophets' and Jesus' prophecies regarding the woman of the Apocalypse, and the Second Coming of the Christ? It is because these prophecies showed the importance of accepting both the revelation and the revelator, Mary Baker Eddy. Again, why? So that we do not accept human opinions instead of divinely revealed Truth. "Jesus, through absence from the body, and through spiritual insight, was able to discern and teach us our error. This discernment and teaching, and his marvelous works, are readily accounted for when we remember that 'Christ is God, and that Jesus held all that he was God, and wrought from the standpoint of his God-being'" (First edition,).

Mrs. Eddy states (*Mis.* 188:16) that "St. Paul first reasons upon the basis of what is seen, the effects of Truth on the material senses; thence, up to the unseen, the testimony of spiritual sense; and right there he leaves the subject.

"Just there, in the intermediate line of thought, is where she [Mary Baker Eddy] found it, when she discovered Christian Sci-

ence. And she has *not* left it, but continues the explanation of the power of Spirit up to its infinite meaning, its allness.”

“Think of this, dear reader, for this [explanation of the power of Spirit] will lift the sackcloth from your eyes....[You will find that] the very circumstance, which your suffering sense deems wrathful and afflictive, Love can make an angel entertained unawares....Arise from your false consciousness into the true sense of Love, and behold [“innocence and purity”] the Lamb’s wife,—Love [your real being, your own Mind] wedded to its own spiritual idea. Then cometh the *marriage* feast, for this revelation will destroy forever the physical plagues imposed by material sense” (S&H 574:25).

“Ages pass, but this leaven of Truth—[this unseen Spirit, this Christ message, brought by Mary Baker Eddy in the Second Coming of the Christ] is ever at work. [Because the answer to mankind’s problems is spiritual and moral, not intellectual and technical, this Christ message] must destroy the entire mass of error, and so be eternally glorified in man’s spiritual freedom—[in man’s marriage, man’s oneness, with the infinite good or Love that we call God]” (S&H 118:6-12).

Twice in human history the clouds of material-mindedness have opened to reveal the full possibilities of scientific being, fulfilling the prophesy of “the two anointed ones,” “the two witnesses” to the oneness of infinite good that expresses itself as man.



Mrs. Eddy's birthplace in Bow, New Hampshire

CHAPTER XII

“GO YE INTO ALL THE WORLD”

Seeing Mrs. Eddy’s Rightful Place Important

It is critically important that we see and understand Mary Baker Eddy’s rightful place. Even if the estoppels in the *Manual* were obeyed, and even if students acknowledged that the woman in the Apocalypse pre-figured Mrs. Eddy’s writings, bringing the Second Coming of the Christ, this would not be sufficient to really give Mrs. Eddy her rightful place.

There is much more to this than appears on the surface. Remember how pleased Jesus was with Peter’s perception of him as the Christ? Jesus knew that in seeing him as the Christ, Peter had glimpsed the key to the “Life-problem” (Preface, 1910 ed., ix:30).

Jesus knew that he spoke for *ALL* of us. Sooner or later we each have to acknowledge that instead of being a matter man, each of us *is* the Christ identity in individual form. Right now each individual is God in disguise. What Jesus knew, Mrs. Eddy also knew. “Man has a noble destiny” (*No.* 46:19). For the unfolding of this divine destiny she continually labored. Mr. Carpenter says that “one difference between Mrs. Eddy and her followers was that she was much more interested in fulfilling her destiny than her students were in fulfilling theirs. Mrs. Eddy was determined to live under what was God’s destiny for her, at whatever cost.” And the cost was great. Only prayer without ceasing and habitual goodness enabled her to endure.

Mary Baker Eddy lived the human and divine coincidence. She made the Word flesh with her unflinching spiritual perspective,

and her unswerving reliance on infinite good. One who knew her well states: "In her presence I was always aware of her holy calling. As one looked at her countenance, alight with spiritual radiance, one felt one's self in the presence of one inspired by God."

A reporter wrote: "On the evening that I first met Mrs. Eddy...I went to her peculiarly fatigued. I came away in a state of exhilaration and energy that made me feel I could have walked any conceivable distance. I have met Mrs. Eddy many times since then, and always with this same experience repeated" (*Pul.* 36:14). Many students have provided invaluable insights into the life of one of the most remarkable women who ever lived as they tell of the divine guidance she received in the establishment of her church, her daily affairs, and in the healing work she performed.

"Mrs. Eddy was the healing friend of all mankind because of a spiritual purity and selflessness of motivation which ennobled all she did, making it definitely and infinitely wise, enabling her to demonstrate that "the supposition that the laws of matter control man, is as erroneous as it would be to say that figures govern numbers."

Accepting Mrs. Eddy's Revelation

The only way we can really see Mrs. Eddy's position is as we accept her revelation, point by point, as coming direct from God, and learn how to practice it. Then we too will solve the "stupendous Life-problem," and find our Christ selfhood, "all-harmonious," and find the Christ of everyone. Only then will we finally understand Mrs. Eddy's teaching in her earliest classes "You, my students, are God." (See page 35, *Six Days*, English version.) She saw the student's true identity had to be God, infinite good, since nothing exists beyond "the mighty actuality of all-inclusive God, good" (S&H 52:20).

"God is individual Mind [your real Mind]" (*Mis.* 101:31). If God is the All and the Only, what else, in reality, could her students be? But this correct identity, of course, has to be *LEARNED* just as people had to learn that the earth is round and not flat, even though the round earth was here all the time, but mankind was unaware of it.

As Christian Science practitioners, we may be helped by knowing that it is what we are reading in the textbook and the Bible that is giving the treatment, that is, if we *believe* what we read. Often it is a great help to a patient, struggling with a belief of disease or sin, to be told how the author of Science and Health regarded her book. It is important that the patient read the textbook with the knowledge that it is inspired, that it is revelation direct from God. Doing so, he will be more expectant of hearing God's Word, of laying hold of the spiritual idea that will destroy the error which in belief is causing him to suffer.

Conviction is necessary in order to free the human thought from "self-imposed materiality and bondage." "When the reader is convinced that Science and Health was written by God's witness, whose consciousness was a fountain of Life, filled with the majesty of divine anointing, graced with a wisdom freshly drawn from the wells of salvation, and springing forth in peaceful persistent strength," he will have confidence and expect healing. His conviction of his present perfection will grow. When he is "thoroughly persuaded in [his] own mind concerning the truth which [he] thinks or speaks, [he] will be the victor" (S&H 412:7).

Mrs. Eddy has shown us that by studying the nature of God, infinite good—as set forth in the seven synonyms for God—we find *what we truly are*, namely, the *whole* of infinite good, individually expressed. At the pool of Bethesda we hear the word "whole" mentioned six times. The impotent man was healed when he was told, "Behold, thou art made whole."

Christian Science has revealed the scientific sense of all things and catapulted us into the post-religious age. The erroneous concepts of Old Theology must disappear. Manifold changes lie ahead, as our understanding unfolds. In Christian Science even atomic action will be seen as a constructive, not destructive force. "Atomic action is Mind, not matter...Divine Science demonstrates Mind as dispelling a false sense and giving the true sense...wherein *the mortal evolves not the immortal*...wherein man is coexistent with Mind, and is the recognized reflection of [the] infinite Life and Love [that

you are in reality]" (*Mis.* 190:1).

In this Mind that you are, everything is revealed *AS* you, not *TO* you. Your consciousness is your universe. Jesus discovered God, Love, infinite good, as his identity: "I am the way, the truth, and the life," he divinely insisted. "The mission of Jesus was to separate material belief from spiritual understanding, and to show that Truth never mixes with error," said Mrs. Eddy.

(First edition, page 313): "The sweet and spiritual *significance of the death on the cross*, is Love laying down all of earth to instruct its enemies the way to heaven, proving what heaven is, and how obtained. We speak of the blood of Jesus as efficacious to save sinners; it is the efficacy of the Truth and Love that Jesus taught and demonstrated, which alone can destroy sin....The blood of Christ was an offering of Spirit and not matter, a pledge of undying Love. O! highest conceptions of spiritual sense tell us, what is *Love!*"

"Preach the Gospel to Every Creature"

Today, more than ever, we need to make treatment practical. We need to obey Jesus' command, "Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature" (Mark 16:15). Could this not mean also, "Go ye into the prisons;* go ye into the 'half-way house' stations; go ye into the correctional facilities; go ye into the drug abuse and the the alcohol treatment centers?" All these are where Christian Science is needed most.

"Down among the poor and lowly, there your Christian work must be," as the hymn goes. We can say "Amen" to that! Jesus was rejected by the affluent. His disciples were "the poor and lowly" fishermen. Mrs. Eddy too had to start with "the poor and lowly," with shoe-factory workers, to whom she early started speaking. The

*We have been involved in programs for distribution of Science and Health to prisons, nursing homes, hotels and other public avenues, that have resulted in over 60,000 copies in the last two years being shared in these areas, at the time of this printing.

sparse congregations hung on every word, their faces washed in hope because at every service people were healed, and went away rejoicing. We, too, as Jesus and Mary Baker Eddy did, need to “go into all the world.”

On Mrs. Eddy’s last carriage ride, Laura Sargent reports that Mrs. Eddy murmured, “If my students had obeyed me, I might have stayed and carried the cause.” We know she did carry the Cause, and that she fulfilled the scriptural prophecy concerning her mission to bring the Second Coming of the Christ. Perhaps in that saying she meant she could have saved it from its present temporary decline. Today, we as Christian Scientists are certainly *NOT* carrying the cause in this regard. Had Mrs. Eddy remained with us, she would have kept Christian Science “abreast of the times,” as she did in her time, by heeding and obeying Jesus’ command, “*Go ye into all the world. Preach the gospel to every creature.*”

How did she “go into all the world”?

By healing the sick, reforming the sinner, raising the dead and teaching students to do the same; by giving sermons and lectures (at which people were healed in miraculous ways); by writing the scripturally prophesied “little book,” *Science and Health*; by writing *Prose Works* and *Christ and Christmas*; by establishing the *Christian Science Journal*, the *Christian Science Sentinel*, the *Herald*, and the *Christian Science Monitor* (with which she intended to lift our eyes to a horizon far beyond our doorstep); by establishing The Christian Science Publishing Society; by writing the *Church Manual*; by establishing, for use *during her lifetime*, a College for teachers and practitioners, and a Board of Lectureship. She also wrote an incredible number of letters, indeed thousands!

In these and many other ways Mrs. Eddy obeyed Jesus’ command. She did all this in forty-four years! Think of the intelligence, the courage, the divine energy, the great unselfed love for humanity that it took to do all that she did, in that short time, in obedience to “Go ye into all the world. Preach the gospel to every creature.”

To Mrs. Eddy, *The Christian Science Monitor* was the final link between her church and the whole great various unredeemed

world with its splendor, its wretchedness, its ideal potential. Through the *Monitor's* pages she hoped that things we did not like to look at or think of, such as appeared in tabloid-style journalism, which seldom gives space to what is right and relevant—problems we do not feel able to cope with—would now be faced manfully. Correct thinking concerning the world's doing must be cultivated and maintained. The *Monitor's* motto was “to injure no man, but to bless all mankind...to spread undivided the Science that operates unspent.” Like all her other writings, it was to shout to the world “I [Mary Baker Eddy's teaching] am thy deliverer.”

In the World Today

Mary Baker Eddy went into all the world, preached the gospel to every creature, and paved the way for us to do the same. But since Mrs. Eddy's leaving, we, as Christian Scientists, have mostly *stayed out* of the world.

Still, Christian Science has made, and is continuing to make, a dramatic impact. Although the Christian Science church organization and the healings by Christian Science practitioners are in decline, many of the fundamental ideas of Christian Science are being increasingly embraced by the world.

In stark contrast to Mrs. Eddy's time—when her ideas were thought of as heretical, and were anathema to hierarchical ecclesiasticism and Old Theology, and there was little interest in spiritual healing—today there is *wide* public interest in mental and spiritual healing. Many churches that, in Mrs. Eddy's time, reviled and persecuted her, are today stressing healing and the power of the mind for good; their preachers are using her writings as a basis for their sermons. People like Norman Cousins, Deepak Chopra, de Chardin, and dozens of other important and widely-read authors are writing best sellers on the subject of spiritual and mental healing, which are selling by the millions. Bill Moyer's television series on spiritual healing was immensely successful. Equally significant, our physical scientists are rapidly becoming theologians, defining matter as noth-

ing other than the construction of our consciousness, our thinking.

These writers and scientists are beginning to say and teach what Mrs. Eddy taught and wrote a hundred and twenty-five years ago. While Christian Science, which initiated it all, is seldom mentioned, still, these books, magazines, T.V. programs, and scientists, *are bringing to view* Mary Baker Eddy's great revelation.

Dr. John M. Dorsey, a most spiritually-minded M.D., in his best selling book *Illness or Allness*, answers the question of what his idea of body is, saying: "My idea of my body is that all that passes for 'matter' is nothing but mind. It exists as mental material in my mind. Existence of any kind is all subjective existence...there can never be an external anywhere. All that passes for an 'external world' is repudiated reality of subjectivity."

Dr. Larry Dossey, another spiritually-minded M.D., who was reviewed in the March 1996 Reader's Digest, discussed the power of prayer in the cure of disease in his 1994 book, *Healing Words*. He says, "Any time any technique or therapy affects human bodies, it's the business of medicine to know more about it. I would defend this as a legitimate medical research project. If doctors don't open up this possibility, they're not being good scientists. I think we need to get over our religious indigestion on this point of view."

As early as the 1930s the Mayo brothers, Dr. William James Mayo and Dr. Charles Horace Mayo, let the world know they had sent their incurables to Christian Science practitioners, and they *had been healed*.

In 1964, at the age of 49, author Norman Cousins was stricken by a crippling, supposedly irreversible joint disease. He decided to become a partner with his doctor in his treatment and used *positive* emotions to help harness his body's healing power. He soon made substantial progress. He recounted the experience in the best-selling *Anatomy of an Illness*. He then set out on a wonderful career to prove that we all have the power to make ourselves well.

The fallacy of age is being conquered, too. Those hearing Time's winged chariot are learning that the fountain of youth is ever-present. The Seattle *Sunday Times* of December 21, 1996 devoted

considerable space to America's 215,000 centenarians, the oldest being 113 years. Centenarians are very much on the increase, and they seemed to be a happy lot. Students of Christian Science should be among these. They have learned to *START WITH PERFECTION* and are learning there are no processes or cycles of time needed to reach "Nirvana" or "the promised land."

Science and Health tells us "man in Science is neither young nor old. He has neither birth nor death....He does not pass from matter to Mind, from the mortal to the immortal [but has] the everlasting grandeur and immortality of development, power, and prestige" (p. 244:23).

Let's believe ourselves young. Then, because the mental state governs the physical, "the radiance of Spirit [will] dawn upon the enraptured sense with bright and imperishable glories." Our Leader tells us "Christian Science is...at [the point of perfection] and must be practiced therefrom" (*My*. 242:5).

How Fares the Revolution?

Today we ask: How fares the revolution? All signs show real spiritual progress. A medical conference in Boston in December 1995—including many physical scientists—explored the once scorned healing results of spiritual approaches. Dr. Herbert Benson and global investment legend Sir John Templeton collaborated to convene a mind-body-spirit conference of tremendous value to the health (and self-knowledge) of humanity.

Dr. Benson indicated that up to ninety percent of cases are usually the result of anxiety or stress, that medical treatment can be reduced or even eliminated by prayer. At this prestigious medical conference, Mrs. Virginia Harris, member of the Christian Science Board of Directors, quoted from *Science and Health*, page 411:20-22: "The procuring cause and foundation of all sickness is fear, ignorance, or sin. Disease is always induced by a false sense mentally entertained, not destroyed." Medical doctors came away from that conference saying that no one could sit through all those panels on

healing and still believe there is no relation between spirituality and healing.

Many holistic approaches for treating disease continue to spring up. The Gerson Therapy, Bonita, California, advertises that Dr. Gerson has “healed some of the most deadly forms of cancer and other diseases holistically....many patients living as much as fifty years after their ‘terminal’ diagnosis.” The Gerson Institute holds seminars to educate medical professionals, and educate the public on how to heal themselves. Even ten years ago it would have been difficult to garner interest in this type of holistic healing. But things are changing fast!

In “telemedicine” healing, the mental is coming more to the front as doctors with 300-mile electronic stethoscopes, two-way television, and long-distance x-ray transmission, diagnose patients at the other end of the state. So popular is this method becoming that legislation is being passed to keep out charlatans and snake-oil salesmen.

It is not only the medical establishment and physical scientists who are turning more and more to prayer, and to the mental. Business and professional people across the nation are meeting (sometimes as early as 7:00 a.m.) to share “prayer breakfasts,” to nurture their spirituality, to support one another in times of need, and to find ways to integrate their religious faith into the world of work. Religion and spirituality increasingly seem to be the grist of casual office conversation.

With the change from the sixth to the seventh thousand-year period of biblical history, “material history is drawing to a close” (*No.* 45:27), and the world is clamoring for a change of consciousness. The whole of human history may depend upon a change of thinking.

Just think of what the change of thinking in even one individual can mean. Witness St. Paul, where the stunning alteration culminated in a sudden mutation. Think of what that meant in enlightenment for all mankind. Without St. Paul’s work on earth to show Jesus’ divine authority, what would have happened to the teach-

ing and example of Christ Jesus?

Today, as millions are seeking spiritual solutions for their problems, *we need to go into the world*, not stay out of it. One way to go into the world is through giving people literature or making it available to them. As a child, I remember mamma and papa taking literature to hotels, barber shops, restaurants, beauty parlors, any place where Christian Scientists had put up racks for Christian Science literature. The literature was well received and was a small way of going “into all the world” with what had been so wondrously given to us.

Encounter on a Train

Sitting next to a stranger on a long bus, train, or plane ride one can sometimes lead the conversation to something helpful. Many years ago, on a two-hour train ride, the woman sitting next to me asked me what I did. At that time I was getting much help from Mr. Herbert Eustace’ answer to the question, “How do you know there is God?” So I asked her that question. She was so intrigued with what I had gotten from the Eustace book that she asked me if she could get a copy. I said it was only sold in sets of four at \$10.50. She (a total stranger) gave me \$10.50 and her address, to order the books for her.

Talking to receptive strangers is one small way in which we can “go into all the world...” On another occasion, my husband and I were vacationing at the Sol Duc Hot Springs in the Olympic Mountains. I swam near the steps where cripples often came down into the “healing” pool. I helped the handicapped down the steps and engaged them in conversation, again bringing up the question, “How do you know there is God?” Two different invalids—total strangers—later came to our cabin and each gave me \$10.50 for a set of Mr. Eustace’ books.

Over a few years time I sold 125 sets of the Eustace books—mostly to church members. Then, one day, the Committee on Publication (C.O.P.) came to our church in the person of a courtly gentleman whose engaging manner belied his purpose. Solemnly and with great authority he officially informed the church members that Mr.

Eustace had been “excommunicated” from the Mother Church. “This area,” he warningly confided, “is swarming with Eustace books.” After heaping volleys of abuse upon the head of Mr. Eustace, he gravely prognosticated dire consequences if every church member who possessed these books did not burn them.

Some members, unfortunately, did destroy their books. Others laughed and considered the C.O.P.’s hype and hoopla just so much nonsense. I, the distributor, was henceforth considered a mixed bag.

This event was a heartbreaking demonstration of the damage done to the Christian Science movement by the burgeoning ecclesiastical power of those acting in disobedience to the *Manual*. It was the sort of ecclesiasticism that destroyed the church centuries ago, and the success of healing at that time. By such cruel tactics they have worked to weave a monstrous enveloping blanket of silence intended to smother the memory of our beloved Leader, and so separate her from her great work on earth.

Mary Baker Eddy dearly loved Mr. Eustace. It was to him that her letter to “our far western students” was sent. (See *My* 197:13.) When Mr. Eustace visited our little group in Bethlehem, he spoke with deepest gratitude concerning the mission for which “God had chosen him,” halting at one point to bury his face in his hands. He had stood steadfastly with Mrs. Eddy; and the so called excommunication was an attempt of ecclesiasticism to discredit her through him.

Books Are the Carriers of Civilization

“Books are the carriers of civilization. Without books, history is silent, literature dumb, science crippled, thought and speculation at a standstill.” That is why Mrs. Eddy established The Christian Science Publishing Society. We need to preach, explain and reinforce what she taught and wrote a hundred and twenty five years ago. As we do, the world will eventually seek us out, and will study what she published regarding reality and our oneness with God—our wedding to divine reality. It will then no longer be necessary for graying professors of the physical sciences, in their worn tweeds and

bow ties, to meet after hours in dingy basements with a handful of brave students to take peeps at the wondrous reality divine Science makes clear to us. In the not too distant future many more will be singing: "When the Saints go marching home."

Mrs. Eddy prophesied that IF Christian Scientists "attest their fidelity to Truth...in the twentieth century every Christian church in our land...will approximate the understanding of Christian Science sufficiently to heal the sick in his name..." (*Pul.* 22). This is already becoming evident in the way many churches are stressing healing and in the way many of Mrs. Eddy's ideas are being adopted and accepted by the general public. There is the prospect that in the remaining few years of this century Mrs. Eddy's teaching will become prominent, certainly in all western nations.

The Christ, the Truth, does not come and go, it does not flop around like a bagged trout. It *abides forever* as the truth about the lie that man is matter, "made up of brain, blood, bones, and other material elements." St. Paul said, "They which are the children of the flesh, these are not the children of God." But every human being has the capacity to become what he was before human birth dropped the veil of matter over him in what Scripture calls the first death.

Existence cannot be correctly seen when viewed through the *veil* called the eyes of man. Through the teachings of the Second Coming of the Christ, the Christian Scientist not only learns that he is the child of God, but also gets his eyes opened to become aware of himself as being all that God is.

"I Didn't Know There Was A Difference"

We are God in disguise, and live as Mind manifesting itself. Mrs. Eddy made this clear in her response to a student she had profusely thanked for having done something right. When the student said, "Don't thank me, Mother, thank God," Mrs. Eddy replied. "I didn't know there was any difference." (I wonder if Mrs. Eddy was conscious of how often she was making a memory. How grateful we are to those who caught the great spiritual truths she uttered, held

them in memory, and wrote them down for us!)

“By grace are ye saved.” It is already so. Grace means we already have all that God, infinite good, is and has. Everything good that has come into your or my experience has come by grace. We did not think of it ahead of time or plan it. Nothing can stop the being that you are, because you exist independently of what the world calls matter or embodiment.

But we don’t come naturally into being all that God is any more than we come naturally into being a mathematician. Mathematical understanding has to be laboriously gained. In the same way—because of the deeply ingrained belief, that is so universally accepted, that we are flesh, blood and bones mortals—we must diligently, intelligently seek the knowledge of infinite good and keep its law. When the way seems hard, long, and gruelling, remember “the very circumstance which your suffering sense deems wrathful and afflictive, Love can make an angel entertained unawares” (S&H 574:27).

“There is no redundant drop in the cup our Father permits us” (*Mess.* ‘02. 19:29). Remember Joseph said to his jealous brethren who had sold him into slavery, “It was not you that sent me hither, but God...God did send me before you to preserve life.” Sometimes that which appears as the dissolution of what you hold most precious is the very means of awakening you to the spiritual life. As Mrs. Eddy said, “When these things cease to bless they will cease to occur.”

While Mrs. Eddy was with us she took the main shock of the world’s antagonism. She was materiality’s destroyer; and as such she experienced many struggles in overcoming the opposition of entrenched materiality’s lethal attempts to overthrow her. In *Documents*, page 27, Clara Choate writes: “Every mental prayerful *energy* was required to combat the evil that pursued Mrs. Eddy. Hers was not a life of ease. She would rather go hungry for food or companionship than desert her post of duty. When writing the most valuable instructions or by-laws, or [other] matters relating to the Christian Science Cause, error would attack her in the most insidious ways, making the students think she was their enemy, and causing personal divisions between themselves, terming the evils as coming from her

instead of [animal magnetism] the enemy impersonal” (*Documents*, early Carpenter book,* page 27).

Clara Choate witnessed Mrs. Eddy’s “untiring love, foresight, and patience in teaching others to heal, her times of dire persecution, her hours of loneliness, and almost isolation, except with God....Need her followers complain if the way is fraught with trials and tribulations, and may they exercise patience and love as our beloved Leader did in the birth throes of the great cause of Christian Science.” Each must learn that *here and now* God is and ever will be our own Mind.

Clara Choate was also a witness to Mrs. Eddy’s instantaneous healing of the sick and sorrowful. She recalls Mrs. Eddy’s “eloquent upturned face, beaming with the glorious hopes of a soul inspired. I felt she was pleading for the whole sick world, and is still pleading for the students to do this work.... ‘All the emoluments in the world,’ Mrs. Eddy said, ‘all the admiration that can ever be excited is not nor can be surpassed by the gratitude of a sick person healed.’”

The author of this book has had ample reason to express such gratitude. I was only six or seven when my mother was healed of blindness in three treatments; and my father—whom the best physicians in the Northwest said had only a few months to live—was restored to perfect health through Christian Science. Witnessing these healings so filled my heart with gratitude that all my life I have wanted nothing more than to praise and glorify the infinite good that came with the advent of Mary Baker Eddy and the Second Coming of the Christ.

Jesus’ Love for His Disciples

Mrs. Eddy said, “The wisdom of this hour and the proper labor of this hour is to know of a certainty the quality of the seed which takes root in our thought...in short, the moral life’s history is,

**Miscellaneous Documents relating to Christian Science and its Discoverer and Founder Mary Baker Eddy, privately printed by Gilbert C. Carpenter, CSB and Gilbert C. Carpenter, Jr., CSB, 1936*

Be good, do good, speak good, and God, infinite good, cares for all that is and seems to be.

If the radical spirituality of Christian Science is to win its way in the face of the world's opposition, it will have to do so on the battleground of daily living rather than the parade ground of publicity. Mrs. Eddy knew it was the students' *materiality* that clogged their progress. The need, she said, is for study and daily Christian demonstration of the same love Jesus exemplified.

"Earth's actors change earth's scenes; and *the curtain of human life should be lifted on reality*, on that which outweighs time; on duty done and life perfected, wherein joy is real and fadeless. Who of the world's lovers ever found her true? (*Mess. '02: page 17:13*).

"The nature of Jesus made him keenly alive to the injustice, ingratitude, treachery, and brutality that he received. Yet behold his love! So soon as he burst the bonds of the tomb he hastened to console his unfaithful followers and to disarm their fears. [What love!] Again: *True to his divine nature, he rebuked* them on the eve of his ascension, called one a "fool"—then, lifting up his hands and blessing them, he rose from earth to heaven" (*Mess. '02. 17:13 & 18-30*). Think of it! Jesus "hastening to console his unfaithful followers." Words of comfort, skillfully administered, are certainly the oldest therapy known to man, and surely here Jesus showed his God-character.

"Jesus [in his love] uncovered and rebuked sin...to Peter he said: 'Thou art an offense unto me.'...The strong language of our Master confirms a certain magistrate's description that "His rebuke is fearful" (See 1910 ed, S&H 6:23-31). Mrs. Eddy too, through love, had to rebuke students, for which she endured great suffering. She told the artist, James Gilman, of the "burdens I have borne through the necessity I have felt for rebuking students [who] could not receive my rebuke as coming from love for them. This is the great test of the true student...It was when I began to teach and be faithful with students that I began to know suffering and sorrow."

The vastness of Mrs. Eddy's love for her students impelled her to rebuke their errors, however difficult this was for her, but the Love that commanded her also sustained her. On page 64 of Gilman's

book, *Recollections of Mary Baker Eddy*, he writes, "...that last night she had come to revelations that had exceeded anything she had before, in which she saw plainly that all things were put under her feet and the Love of God was so manifest it exceeded anything she could describe. 'All things were dissolved in it [even the most remote and forbidding]; all sense of evil, all antagonism; nothing was left but the sea of God's immeasurable Love.'" It was these revelations of Love, these incredible spiritual insights that lifted the veil of matter, giving glimpses of the real world of Spirit, that provided her with occasional sweet surcease from care and the terrible burdens she bore in setting her students straight.

Mary Baker Eddy proved, manifested, that her own Mind was God. When she wrote *Science and Health* she "made herself the Son of God"—as Jesus had done. She said: "A power above me [above a mortal sense of self] wrote *Science and Health*." And if *she* could prove that *her own Mind was God* or infinite good, and that infinite good dictated *Science and Health*, we know that we—by studying thoroughly the letter and imbibing the spirit—can also prove that God is our real Mind. This needs to be presented in many ways, and for that purpose Mrs. Eddy established the Christian Science Publishing Society.

When Mary Baker Eddy wrote *Science and Health*, which she says was dictated by God, proving that her own Mind was God, she proved that your real Mind is God,—that each one's real Mind is the infinite good we call God. "This is the point the enemy tries hardest to hide."

The enemy (hypnotism, aggressive mental suggestion) doesn't want you to find out that infinite good is your own Mind, your divine consciousness; it doesn't want you to find out that "error comes to you for life, and you give it the only life it has." It doesn't want you to know that infinite good, Truth, perfection, is omnipresent, filling the very spot where error seems to be.

No one knew better than Mary Baker Eddy how real the *UN-REAL* can seem; how with relentless regularity the unreal presents its hypnotic picture for our acceptance. No one knew better than she

how “*the belief that God has a separate being leads to multitudinous errors.*” But when one ascends to behold oneself as a spiritual being, the trials and struggles of the Adam-dream-living recede and finally cease. The Adam-dream existence—prompted and promoted by Old Theology, Mrs. Eddy’s bitterest enemy, with its ecclesiastical babble from the tower of Babel—waned and finally ceases. Without Mrs. Eddy’s work on earth the Bible would have remained a closed book.

Mary Baker Eddy proved over and over that healing takes place as we hold to the truth when confronted with error. Holding to the realization that God, infinite good, is the real entity, the real identity, the real being, the only law, cause, substance, the only effect, brings healing to the situation.

Mary Baker Eddy Was Divinely Prepared

Why did the Second Coming of the Christ come through Mary Baker Eddy? Because she was the only one on earth prepared to receive it. She was the only one prepared to endure the hatred of the carnal mind’s relentless efforts to destroy her great God-dictated revelation. But the time is coming when Mary Baker Eddy will be as highly valued as is Jesus.

God [your own real Mind, the kingdom of God within your consciousness] selects for the highest service one who has grown into such fitness for it as renders any abuse of the mission an impossibility" (S&H 455:20). Your own Mind obeys Joshua 24:15 which says: “Choose ye this day whom ye will serve,” Even as a child Mary Baker chose God. This constant choosing infinite good or God, prepared her to fulfill the scriptural prophecies concerning her and the Second Coming of the Christ. Does this make her history less holy? Does this make her ordinary, and no different from anyone else—as some would say who insist that giving her her rightful place is “deifying her?” No! She, like Jesus, “made [herself] the Son of God” and showed us how we could do the same. She said “No truth is more certain than that we are the arbiter of our own fate.”

“God [her own true Mind—the kingdom of God within her con-

sciousness] had been graciously preparing me during many years for the reception of this final revelation of the absolute divine Principle of scientific mental healing” (S&H 107:4). The greatest thing was, that we find in Jesus and in Mary Baker Eddy—find in a person, just like ourselves—all these wonderful spiritual qualities. And to know that these spiritual qualities exist, latently, in each of us. It is up to us to choose whom we will serve. We have to “admit ourself Soul,” God identity, and spiritual understanding. We have to learn that the “I” of us is God, Mind. “The belief that God has a separate being [from you and me] leads to multitudinous errors,” said Mary Baker Eddy; and she chose to be on the side of God, infinite good.

“On this point,” said Mrs. Eddy, on page 273 of the first edition, “mankind needs much enlightenment, for the *SCIENCE OF BEING* alone solves the problem of man harmoniously....When we ask earnestly, and strive for health to be useful, able to do good to ourself and others, *why does he withhold it?* These are unanswerable questions, irreconcilable with Wisdom, until we learn God is not person, but *Principle*.” It was revealed to Mrs. Eddy that God can only be understood as a Science. Only as we understand the Science of our being do we make ourself equal with God as Jesus did (See S&H 133:24). God is Principle. We must understand this Principle as Mary Baker Eddy did, to direct our being in harmony with it; and then shall we be able to govern the physical and mental. “*All depends on mind*; matter holds no power over man to create or to destroy....”

Because humanity clings so persistently, so tenaciously, to the belief that sex is never going out of style—that man is the product of a fertilized material egg, resulting in holy and God-sent life—Mrs. Eddy was forced to make many relative statements in the textbook, intended to gently lead mankind out of this error that Jesus called “the murderer from the beginning.” In Mr. Kimball’s 1908 Association Address, he said, “Mrs. Eddy has been obliged to make many concessions to current religious thought rather than up heave it too violently [which blankly stating that the production of people by sex was murder, would do], but it cannot be doubted that she hopes we will push forward to the appreciation of her higher statements.

She attempts to reach many different stages of thought through Science and Health, but it seems sensible to assume that we will not do well to cling to the lower plane of statement that has in many instances been presented for the beginner. It has long been recognized that Science reverses old methods. Mrs. Eddy discloses the fact that the way of salvation is different from that prescribed by old theology. She reserved her strongest rebukes...for those phases of human thought which produced a quiet feeling of satisfaction, that all was well with the world. *SHE FOUGHT THIS APATHY*, called it mental drunkenness, a peace, peace, where there is no peace.”

She was emphatic that bringing a child into the world was murder. And though the false belief that the product of sex, of the connubial relation, is life and is holy, is deeply entrenched, deeply ingrained, and universally believed, neither Christ Jesus nor Mary Baker Eddy withheld the knife when it was needed to cut away this deep-rooted, dyed in the wool, error. Jesus and Mary Baker Eddy call us to become what we already are and have forever been. This is the meaning of “By grace are ye saved.” Christian Science teaches us how to become what we already *ARE, AND HAVE ALWAYS BEEN* in reality.

Let it not be said that what the poet, Stefan Zweig wrote, is true, namely, that “Christian Science still lives, but it has grown rigid and formal. What was molten lava when erupted from the volcanic soil of Mary Baker Eddy is now cold; and a tranquil fellowship of undistinguished folk has established itself on the lower slopes of the extinct crater.”

The Writing of Science and Health

A look at Mrs. Eddy’s process in transcribing her divine revelation may help us gain its true sense. Regarding the writing of Science and Health, Mrs. Eddy explained: “I could not write these notes after sunset. All thought in line with Scriptural interpretation would leave me until the rising of the sun. Then the influx of divine inspiration would pour in upon my spiritual sense as gloriously as the sunlight on the material senses” (*My*. 114;18).

Why then does the third picture in her book, *Christ and Christ-*

mas—which we know is the story of Mrs. Eddy’s life—show her as studying the Scriptures by candlelight? We know this picture refers to her process during the time *Science and Health* was being written. Why does it not show the daytime pouring in of divine inspiration, which she experienced in writing *Science and Health*? What is being revealed here?

What we see in this third picture of *Christ and Christmas* is the necessary counterpart of revelation. What is shown here is Mrs. Eddy’s manhood *REASONING* ability. On page 110:15 of *Science and Health*, she tells us: “The Scriptures were illumined; *REASON* and revelation were reconciled.” In this third picture the book of Scripture is open on the desk, but there is no pen or paper. Mrs. Eddy is not transcribing her revelation. She is *thinking* in the candlelight of *reason*. This picture depicts the struggle *BY NIGHT*, which resulted in “understanding, dearly sought, with fierce heart beats.”

Why was this struggle necessary? Mrs. Eddy was seeking to *UNDERSTAND* what had so gloriously poured into her receptive thought during the daylight hours. She received her message as pure revelation first, and then through searching the Bible she saw how her revelation was supported by Scripture.

In this third picture of *Christ and Christmas* Mrs. Eddy is seeking the letter—seeking how to teach and share her revelation with others. This is evidence of her love for us. Mary Baker Eddy had already received the “final revelation” (S&H 107:5), for which “God had been graciously preparing” her for many years. The struggle of “seeking and finding” depicted in this third picture was on behalf of you and me and all mankind. She wanted to find a way to teach all mankind their true identity as “Mind, Spirit, Soul, Principle, Life, Truth, and Love,” and to teach mankind all that these seven words stand for as their identity.

Thanks to her efforts, we will all gradually come to know and understand our divine identity as we follow Mrs. Eddy’s example, and wed reason and revelation, as we study the transcription and explanations of God’s scribe.

Both Mrs. Eddy’s daytime revelation and her candlelight

search were objective, not from out of herself. By day “the influx of divine interpretation would pour *IN UPON*” her, not out from her. By candlelight she would seek reason from the Bible, looking for “Scriptural foundations.” (See S&H 110:15 & marginal heading.) Together revelation and reason represented the divine wedding, the transcendent union of Mind’s qualities.

The manhood attribute she sought, namely, reason, provided the Bible foundation for her inspired daytime illumination which typified the womanhood quality—revelation.

Since all thought is in Mind, the symbols manhood and womanhood pertain to qualities only. And these qualities are accessible to both man and woman; they have nothing to do with sex. It is the union of masculine and feminine *qualities in one consciousness* that constitutes completeness, the true, divine marriage.

This joining of reason and revelation for completeness may be represented by the man angel, portrayed as a woman, seen in one of The Mother Church windows. In Revelation, Chapter ten, St. John tells us that the man-angel’s face was as it were the sun (womanhood). This makes the man angel’s face similar in quality to the clothes of the woman in the sixth, eighth, ninth and tenth pictures in *Christ and Christmas*. We might, therefore, say that the “man-angel” stands for the *individual or manhood* phase of woman before she is fully understood.

Mrs. Eddy did not get her great revelation from the Bible; it was revelation straight from God, her true Mind. She *then* searched the Scriptures for confirmation, wedding reason to revelation. Through her life work reason gave revelation a scriptural foundation, and revelation illuminated Scripture so that it could be understood. Mrs. Eddy’s *life* was the key to the Scriptures, just as Jesus’ life was the key to the Old Testament. St. Paul did not get much from the Old Testament until Jesus’ life illumined it for him.

Answering Mr. Wiggin in a class, Mrs. Eddy said, “I do not find my authority for Christian Science in history, but in *revelation*. If there had never existed such a person as the Galilean Prophet, it would make no difference to me. I should still know that God’s

spiritual ideal is the only real man in His image and likeness” (*My*. 318:31).

Mrs. Eddy told her students that not one word of Science and Health was her own thought. She was the “lone brave star,” demonstrating the human and divine coincidence—demonstrating that the divine Mind was her Mind. At night, after she had read what she had written through the day, as the divine revelation “poured in upon her,” she wondered if the time would ever come when she would understand it. She had not yet demonstrated the whole it contained...[but] she had demonstrated sufficiently to show,...that the Principle was God [our own Mind]” (*Documents*, page 68).

“Learn the truth, then be honest in it, no matter what it cost you [was Mrs. Eddy’s motto].” (*ibid.* 72). This, again, is why the Second Coming of the Christ could come through her. She was willing to give up *everything* in order to be aligned with God, good.

What Mary Baker Eddy taught often sent traditionalists into orbit. But whenever a student rocketed off into space, she would say, “Come down from floating around up there, it’s healing we need,” or “it’s rain we need.” One day when she invited a guest to stay for lunch, the cook, who overheard the guest declining, said, “Please stay. I’ve made a wonderful strawberry shortcake!” Mrs. Eddy said, “Now there’s a Scientist that isn’t soaring over the church steeples.”

When at the end of a class session, a man asked, “Why can we not go without clothing, sleeping, eating, drinking?” Our Leader, with the solemn tenderness reserved for a corpse at a wake, advised him to try it and see if he could.

Her teaching focused on the essentials of the Science, on the Truth she was teaching, which we so often find any excuse to avoid. Most of us don’t want to tackle animal magnetism. We’re no braver than the heckler at the circus, where one of the fiercest lions in the cage came up and took a lump of sugar from the lips of the woman lion-tamer.

“Anyone can do that,” the skeptic yelled.

“Would you like to try it?” asked the ringmaster.

“Sure, but first get those crazy lions out of the way.”

For us, the key is to get self out of the way. Then error is out of the picture. *Documents*, page 81, tells us, “We can never do anything until we impersonalize both good and evil. There is no personality in this warfare; it is all Mind, the eternal, omnipotent Principle of Truth, impersonal good....The work is all with ourselves.” Mrs. Eddy taught the truth with authority, and then left it to unfold in our consciousness. Through the allness of infinite good we must understand that error is nothing, illusion only, hypnotic suggestion, the result of eons of false education. Even while knee-deep in false beliefs, we can’t become unhinged by evil’s lying suggestions if we boot all error out the door. In this way we begin the slaughter “that would make matter an alien.”

The Pioneer has shown us the way Now the work is ours. We must purify our own thought. “Choose ye this day whom ye will serve.” Know that you have the Mind of God; the kingdom of God is within your consciousness. God, infinite good, is *your* Mind, the divine Principle that you are. “Thou art made whole.” See with the eyes of infinite good. Clothe your patient in his right Mind, for he longs to see himself rightly. Be the Love you already are. “Go ye into all the world.”



Attic room where she wrote *Science and Health*
and her love flowed out to all the world.

CHAPTER XIII

THE TEXTBOOK BRINGS THE SYSTEM OF CHRISTIAN SCIENCE

Science and Health Must Go Into the World

“Christian Science is not copyrighted” (*Ret.* 76:2). Science and Health has to be free to go into all the world. Because of this Mary Baker Eddy did not copyright her last edition of Science and Health, and therein hangs a tale. Although error has striven mightily to stop the textbook’s free circulation, these efforts have been and are being thwarted, thanks to Mrs. Eddy’s foresight. Science and Health, which was taken out of bookstores (in the early 1980’s after the ecclesiastical hierarchy won an illegal perpetual copyright on the uncopyrighted Science and Health) is today again for sale in bookstores, and the Mary Baker Eddy Institute is actively working to place Science and Health alongside the Bible in all hotels and motels, where it can give comfort, healing and spiritual inspiration to travelers.*

There is an interesting history connected with this 1907 uncopyrighted edition of Science and Health and the building of the Extension to the original Mother Church. It gives a picture of how alert Mrs. Eddy was, a picture of her wisdom, consecration, spiritual perception, and wide-awake obedience to God.

According to the architect’s plan, the soonest the addition to the original church could be finished was June, 1907. But Mrs. Eddy, through spiritual discernment of what was coming—namely, the cruel

*Over 150,000 copies of Science and Health have been placed in the last year alone!

“Next Friends” suit—gave orders that the Extension must be finished by June, 1906, a year earlier.

The architect and builder said, “It *CAN'T* be done.”

Mrs. Eddy said, “It *MUST* be done.” The hand of God protected and guided the wise, brave Leader of the Christian Science movement, and the famous Extension *was* completed June 10th, 1906, *ONE YEAR EARLIER* than the architects and builders had said it could be done.

This gave the world's newspapers a chance to herald the glory of the miracle, of building the Extension and having it dedicated debt-free on June 10th, 1906. The world's presses, in floods, poured out their praises for Mary Baker Eddy and her astounding leadership and achievement. The world's newspapers acclaimed her as the greatest religious reformer of all ages. They published numerous accounts of the good Christian Science had done. Thus Mrs. Eddy emerged triumphant.

It was not until the following year that the full import of her triumph became clear, when it became apparent that Mrs. Eddy had foreseen and forestalled the enemy's intent to crucify her in a certain few of the world's newspapers. Certain elements of the press had hatched a brutal, diabolical plan, called the “Next Friends” suit. They persuaded Mrs. Eddy's son and her adopted son to sue her for her money. But through spiritual perception, spiritual alertness, spiritual discernment, foresight and insight, Mary Baker Eddy had foreseen their plan, and moved the date for completing the Extension a year ahead. Thereby she got her glorious work finished before the terrible attack on her was launched in certain New York newspapers in 1907.

By commanding that the grand Extension be completed a year earlier, by June, 1906, she blunted the newspaper's attack. The evil her enemies published in 1907 could not eclipse the truth that had already been published. The accusations which might have seemed valid to those who did not have the facts were shown up as baseless fabrication. A great world force (the newspapers that attacked Mrs. Eddy) had tried to prevent the God-inspired liberation of man, and failed.

The Uncopyrighted Textbook

Now comes the important part.

Mrs. Eddy—knowing that this storm, although more than a tempest in an hourglass, would wear itself out without causing permanent damage—withdrew and devoted herself to some of her most important work. While the ruthless, relentless attack of the “Next Friends” suit was being waged against her—an attack which raised the specter of chaos, and in which many saw the warnings of impending doom—Mrs. Eddy quietly occupied herself by making a *final revision* of Science and Health.

In the textbook, S&H page xii, she writes, “Until June 10, 1907, she [Mrs. Eddy] had never read this book throughout consecutively in order to elucidate her idealism.” While the harrowing, lacerating suit was bent on crucifying her, Mrs. Eddy made the vital, all important changes in Science and Health, to ready it as the final *uncopyrighted* edition. Mrs. Eddy worked hard to attain clarity and grace in stating the absolute truth regarding God and man. In this new edition, the setting of each word was as meticulously done as would be the setting of a fine jewel. She also strove for an easy friendliness toward her readers. Regarding the 50th edition, she wrote Augusta Stetson that no one could imagine the work, time, and energy she had expended on it. She also worked hard on this 1907 edition.

As a note of interest here, Mrs. Eddy had labored in the wilderness just forty years when the Extension to The Mother Church was dedicated. In her message, “Choose Ye” (*My*. 6:17-19), she calls this Extension, the “crown.” Taking this in connection with Science and Health 562:1-21 (note especially “crown” in line 16), we can see that the crown types the “man child” or the Science she gave birth to—the Science that reveals humanity’s divine identity—it’s divinity.

Among the changes made in “June, 1907” in Science and Health, the change in the definition of God was by far the most important. In teaching Christian Science our Leader quickly found that: “Apart from the usual opposition to everything new, the one great obstacle to the reception of that spirituality, through which the un-

derstanding of Mind-science comes, is the inadequacy of material terms for metaphysical statements” (S&H 114:32). To overcome this problem, she worked long and hard to give us—through divine Science—seven terms for God, and to define them and their relation to each other and show us how they operate.

In this final edition Mary Baker Eddy dropped the 8th synonym, namely, “Being.” This brought the entire textbook into a divine God-governed *system* that can be learned and demonstrated, like that of music or mathematics. Music, for instance, has a system of seven notes that operate through tone, rhythm, melody, and harmony. Mathematics has a system of ten numerals that operate through addition, subtraction, multiplication, and division, etc. With the system of music or mathematics wonderful things can be done. Once we learn the “system” incorporated in the textbook, we too will do wonderful things. The possibilities are endless.

Once Mrs. Eddy had perfected the “system” a copyright was no more needed for the Christian Science textbook than it would be needed for mathematics or music. It may take a thousand years for all humanity to fully understand the system she has laid out or hidden in the textbook, but it is there and it will be learned. We are no longer living in the theological age, we have come to the scientific age, where Science has a “system” (see S&H 146:31). We have come to the age of “thinkers.”

The “System” in Christian Science

When I talked with Mr. Doorly in 1949, I prosaically said, “God is All.” He said, “Yes, but if I said, music is all, or mathematics is all, what good would that do you? In each case you have to learn their system. In music you have to learn the seven notes and how they operate through tone, rhythm, melody, and harmony. And in math you have to learn the 10 digits and how they operate through addition, subtraction, multiplication and division. Only then can you demonstrate music or mathematics.” To that I said, “Amen.”

Mrs. Eddy humbly said, “I am not the door through which to

enter, nor the rock upon which to build, but what God has spoken to this age through me is the way and sure foundation, and no man enters by any other way into Christian Science.” We have to learn our oneness with the seven synonyms for God, namely, Mind, Spirit, Soul, Principle, Life, Truth, and Love. We have to learn how these seven operate in a fourfold calculus of Word, Christ, Christianity, and Science, on the four levels of spiritual consciousness, namely, Science itself, divine Science, absolute Christian Science, and Christian Science. As we study and understand the seven synonyms through the infinite ideas which express them, we are awakening ourselves to our real and true Christ selfhood.

The seven synonyms for God, operating through Word, Christ, Christianity, and Science on the four levels of thought constitute the “system” of Christian Science. Order and differentiation characterize a system. Researching the seven synonyms for God in Science and Health, we find Mrs. Eddy has stated them in a specific order, according to the Word-order, or the Christ-order, or the Christianity-order.

There is no Science without a system. A system calls for order and diversification. In mathematics the usefulness of the numbers 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, etc. derives from both their order and their distinctness. Mrs. Eddy was divinely led to put the seven synonyms in a particular order—Mind, Spirit, Soul, Principle, Life, Truth, Love—found in Science and Health on page 465:10 as the Word order. Science and Health also gives a Christ order of the synonyms, found on page 115:13; and a Christianity order, found on page 587:5.

Mrs. Eddy also makes it clear that Spirit diversifies by defining each synonym in the Word order very distinctly from any other synonym. Thus we have Mind: characterized as creative ability or conception; Spirit: reality, only; Soul: identity; Principle: classification; Life: individuality; Truth: consciousness; Love: unity with God. The synonyms are also characterized as: law, order, rule, system, method, form, plan or design, and as: “wisdom, purity, spiritual understanding, spiritual power, love, health, holiness” (S&H 116:2).

Each synonym has many characteristics, and each is characterized in Mary Baker Eddy’s writings differently than the other six

synonyms. They also stand in unique relation to each other. For example, Mind is characterized by intelligence, law, power, basis, information, action, creativity. The infinite ideas of Mind have the nature of Spirit, which is characterized as substance, reality, order, the only, strength, divine energy, good.

Soul is characterized by identity, Ego, self-sameness, rule, spiritual understanding, intact, balance. Mind, Spirit, Soul, as one, constitute our Principle. Principle is characterized as harmony, divine government, structure, system, Science, spiritual power, foundation; Principle explains.

Life is characterized by is-ness, eternity, God-governed individuality, inspiration, method. Truth is characterized by consciousness, the whole, form, deliverer, health, ideal, remedy. Truth uncovers, unveils. Love is characterized as fulfillment, plan, purpose, rest, peace, perfection. Love accepts.

Mrs. Eddy tells us, “Divine metaphysics is now *REDUCED TO A SYSTEM*.” The God-dictated textbook is laid out in a “system” which consists of three fundamental categories of being in which:

(1) The seven synonyms for God—Mind, Spirit, Soul, Principle, Life, Truth, and Love—constitute the nature of infinite good.

(2) These seven synonyms for God operate through a four-fold calculus of being—the city foursquare. The four sides of the city are the incorporeal, divine, supreme, infinite, and they refer to the four functions of Word, Christ, Christianity, and Science, or seeking, finding, using, being—also known as revelation, translation, demonstration, explanation.

(3) Divine action takes place on four levels: Science itself, divine Science, absolute Christian Science, and Christian Science.

When we someday understand the system Mrs. Eddy has embedded in Science and Health, we will be able to use it just as we today use mathematics to calculate mathematically. When, through spiritual education, “thought accepts the divine infinite calculus....[all material substances will] vanish, swallowed up in the infinite calculus of Spirit” (S&H 520:15 & 209:25), and Spirit means infinite good.

Why is the *system* of Christian Science not better understood

today? Judge Hanna was perhaps the first to see the system in the textbook. When he approached Mrs. Eddy about it, she said, “Yes, it is all there,” but indicated it would take time to unfold, and that healing was the present great need. Teaching the system of Christian Science in her day would have been like teaching a five-year old the whole system of music or mathematics rather than starting with simple scales or counting.

In *Un.* 6:27 Mrs. Eddy tells us, “the platoons of Christian Science [must first be] thoroughly drilled in the plainer manual of their spiritual armament... ‘Wait patiently on the Lord’; and in less than another fifty years his name will be magnified in the apprehension of this new subject.”

It was just fifty years after she wrote these words that Mr. John Doorly of London, England began to see the system, and teach its beginnings to hundreds of students. (As a note of interest it was also just fifty years later, in 1938, that “Mrs. Eddy’s Place” was published in the *Christian Science Sentinel* and in the *Journal*.)

One day the Science of Christian Science will be taught in schools and colleges, just as the material sciences are taught today. “If the Bible and Science and Health had the place in schools of learning that physiology occupies, they would revolutionize and reform the world through the power of Christ” (*No.* 11:15). This is a moment of hope in history, and we should rejoice in it.

“All Things Be Ready If the Mind Be So”

When I think back and recall how I became aware of this “divine system” Mrs. Eddy has buried in the textbook, I am reminded of the metaphysical truth Shakespeare gave when he said: “*ALL THINGS BE READY IF OUR MINDS BE SO.*” This is the Jacob’s ladder from earth to heaven. There is nothing we cannot do if we are *MENTALLY READY*. The ancients could have had all the wonderful conveniences we have today—even television and the World Wide Web—if their minds had been ready.

I am sure all of us can think of how paths have opened up for

us when “our minds were ready.” Although I grew up in the Christian Science Church, for me the path to discovering the *system* of Christian Science began when I started writing—the last thing I ever thought I would do.

How did it all come about? I recall that I had been reading about cruelty to animals in laboratories and was crying uncontrollably when Bill came home one day. After I blubbered an explanation, he said, “Write the newspaper to help stop this cruelty.” I did, and was totally surprised when they printed my letter, which I followed with many more.

Then one day dear Dr. Lamsa, who translated the Bible directly from the Aramaic into English, and who had several times visited us, asked me to edit some of his writings. He spoke broken English, which spilled over into his writing. I got right to work and put everything in good English. I knew when he read my corrections that my editing was a disaster. He kindly explained that the reason his publisher liked his writings was because they were “different.” Was this a setback? Not in the least. I had gained valuable experience and Dr. Lamsa went on to become world famous, though obviously not with my help.

“All things be ready if the mind be so.” With each little step I was making myself ready for the next. After Mr. Eustace’s wife passed on, he asked me to edit for him—a job his dear Bessie had always done. And so it went, until finally I was myself selling the words I had poured onto paper.

A group of receptive students I met with once a week for twenty years helped me decide what to write. We started by listening to the tapes of Max Kappeler, a student of John Doorly. Max is a citizen of Switzerland, that tiny nation huddled on the banks of the Rhine, famous for its banking, watchmaking, and chocolates, but which will some day be more famous for Max, this metaphysical titan. Along with spiritually-minded Gordon Brown and other highly acclaimed students of Mary Baker Eddy’s “system,” Max Kappeler has done much to educate receptive Christian Scientists in the “system” to which our Leader has reduced the divine metaphysics that

“honors God” (S&H 483:25).

“He Leadeth Me”

Have you ever thought back over your life to see how divine Love has led you forward step by step? Learning Christian Science has nothing to do with sentiment and emotion so common in religion, but has everything to do with gratitude for heavenly leading.

“He leadeth me, O, blessed thought, O, words with heavenly comfort fraught!” With gratitude, almost with awe, I recall a November day when snow swept across the icy pavement and the thermometer registered 20 degrees Fahrenheit. As dear Bill accompanied me to the depot, the stinging air brought tears to our eyes and a biting wind wrapped us in its freezing blast. World War II was in full swing. The long train—every compartment overflowing with soldiers headed for a training camp—blew its shrill whistle and came to a halt. Bill’s company had made special arrangements to have the train stop just for me. I boarded the frigid unheated baggage car compartment as its sole passenger for the twelve-hour-long ride to my destination.

Where was I going?

Only the song “He leadeth me by unsought ways” can answer. A short time before this, someone had casually mentioned the name of a lady living in a distant city. It was Emma Dunn. It must have been God that told me to visit her. Nothing else explains it.

I had not contacted Ms. Dunn. It never occurred to me to phone for an appointment. Looking back today—more than a half century later—this seems incredible. Arriving in her city I took a bus to her apartment. When I knocked on her door she greeted me as though she was expecting me. In a short time she said, “I think I know why you came.” She went to her little treasure-room and came back with an Association Address by a well-known Christian Science teacher, saying, “You can keep it as long as you are in the city.”

She took me to the basement-coffee shop for a sundae; then I was off to my hotel where I wasted no time copying the entire address in shorthand. I took the wonderful paper back to her. We had

another ice cream treat and said good-bye. I never saw her again. As I headed home to dear Bill, little did I dream how that visit would step by step lead me forward toward the only thing I ever wanted—a better understanding of God. “He leadeth me, by unsought ways!”

My next train ride took me to that teacher’s doorstep, again unannounced. She was delighted to see me, especially when she heard I could type. She immediately she set me to work typing up her next association address. She also invited me to attend her upcoming Association, some months away, and I accepted. At that Association Address I sat between two ladies, Magdalene Gaus, and Isabel Weeks, who became life long-friends.

Magdalene introduced me to the writings of Herbert Eustace. As I have already indicated, he and his writings became a great influence in my life. (He visited us in Bethlehem and talked to our little group.) Magdalene took me with her on her next trip to visit the Gilbert Carpenters, Jr. and Sr. Oh, happy day! The Carpenters gave me all the books they had printed. From the Carpenter and Eustace books, which I devoured, I learned much. This was vital and became a link to later leading.

In the meantime, Bill and I moved from Mt. Vernon, Illinois, to Bethlehem, Pennsylvania. There the Christian Science church gave a lecture. It just happened that the lecturer was the one I had introduced when he gave a lecture in Mt. Vernon. We had become good friends when he willingly, graciously accompanied me to various homes and cheered up my sick friends. I can still hear him saying after one visit: “She just ly’n there, await’n t’ die.”

After the Bethlehem lecture, he greeted Bill and me warmly and happily agreed to go home with us. At the table, eating toasted bread over which he poured hot milk and loaded it down with sugar, he said, “Helen, can you meet with me tomorrow, about 10:30?”

Again, “He leadeth me, O, blessed thought; O, words with heavenly comfort fraught!” At that meeting I was so fortified with all I had gotten from the Eustace and the Carpenter books, that I just kept pouring it out. He must have thought I was a candidate for the “On and On” Anonymous Society. But instead he finally said: “Helen,

you should be in *The Journal*.” Surprised, I said, “Oh, no.” He countered, “Oh, yes. It’s a convenience to people seeking help. I will see that you are accepted.” I, of course, had to furnish all that Boston requires of applicants, but, with his help, I made it.

This experience led me to John Doorly, a teacher I had never heard of before. John Doorly used the first *Journal* that had my name in it, to send invitations to for his January 1950 “Practice Talks” in London. I accepted the invitation. It was there that I learned, for the first time, of the divine “system” Mrs. Eddy had incorporated in the textbook.

When I reflect on the saga of my quest for the Holy Grail of understanding and God’s leading, I am literally driven to my knees in humble and grateful thanks. I know that my progress was not of my own doing. I simply worked to make the “mind ready” with no thought where it would lead. “He leadeth [us] by unsought ways.” I am sure many who read this have experienced that leading. And we know that leading goes on.

In *Miscellaneous Writings*, page 81:25, Mrs. Eddy writes, “In the desolation of human understanding, divine Love hears and answers the human call for help; and the voice of Truth utters the divine verities of being which deliver mortals out of the depths of ignorance.” I have repeatedly found this true. One morning as I sat deep in study, suddenly it was as if a voice said to me, “Go to Switzerland and England and talk with those students who have already done a monumental work on the Science and system in the textbook.” I felt the urge was from God (and so it turned out to be.) I looked at the clock. It was 10:30. I called the local airport. A plane left Bethlehem at 1:30. I boarded it after leaving a note on the kitchen table for dear Bill, who was away on a business trip. Arriving in New York City, I was far from the big international airport, but the lady I sat next to was an experienced traveler. “Follow me,” she said. She led me to a helicopter which took us both to La Guardia airport, and I was soon aboard a plane for Switzerland and England.

I shall never forget the love and the instruction I received from Betty Shurter, Mimmie Butikoffer, and Max Kappeler. They

had just written the wonderful Compendiums dealing with the seven synonyms for God. Their special teaching, and the teaching I had received in England, helped me in all the years that followed. “Seek ye first the kingdom of God” and ye will be led—sometimes by a strange providence—to the feet of Christian Science, to a new world of light and Life.

The “System” and Mrs. Eddy’s Successor

In time, when Science and Health is taught in schools and colleges and we all learn the “system” the scripturally prophesied “little book” contains, we will all be able to demonstrate the “Science” of Christian Science just as we demonstrate the science of music and mathematics. This will enable us to accomplish the “pass over”—to “pass over” errors and illusions, by seeing their nothingness, “to pass over” from material thinking to spiritual being.

It is an understanding of the operating of the seven synonyms for God (that we are, and which reveal our God-character)—as they unfold on the four levels of spiritual consciousness—that will be Mrs. Eddy’s successor. This makes each one of us her successor in proportion as the spirit of Christ accompanies the letter of Science. The system laid out in Science and Health enables us to build on a wholly spiritual foundation, where we find that our most valuable asset lies in always starting with God, the Principle that we, in reality, are—the divine Principle which is our real and true Mind.

What a triumphal transition this passover will be! Could there be a greater cause for gratitude and rejoicing than to become aware of our oneness with infinite good?—the universal eternal Mind (your real Mind), the source of all creation? It only looks like creation, since all good has always existed.

Mrs. Eddy has shown us that our only need is to gain the God-character, the divine Christ character. As we strive for more of the Christ-spirit, Science and Health is destined to show us our absolute ever-present and infinite perfection. We will recognize this perfection as we awaken and become the divine Love, which, in reality

we already are. Divine love with which Mrs. Eddy was so fundamentally, so richly, so divinely imbued, enabled her to so completely impersonalize evil that she was able to physically heal even the bitterest enemies among those who sought to injure her.

How did Mrs. Eddy foresee and forestall evil? It was her love of the good and beautiful, her absolute trust in Truth that enabled her to meet and overcome her enemies' hatred and persecution. She knew that the Love that, through her, was going out to the world was the greatest power there is, and the only thing that will change thought. Her prayers were always going out to the world and to her so-called enemies with love and a desire to help them. She told her students that to withstand persecution, she had to learn the lesson of the grass. "When the wind blew, I bowed before it [to resist would have been fatal]; when mortal mind put its heel upon me, I went down and down in humility and waited,—waited until it took its heel off, and then I rose up" (Carpenter item). "Error bites the heel of Truth, but cannot kill Truth" (S&H 216:7).

The "Passover"

Mrs. Eddy's sublime success, the glory of her everlasting victory over the malice, hatred, and persecution her enemies meted out to her, is what the Bible would call "the passover." Mrs. Eddy knew the omnipresence of divine perfection, and therefore the instantly available all-power of Love, the feast of Spirit, infinite good. This *knowing* of the Truth takes us *OVER*, not through, the grievous, painful, and calamitous mortal mind experiences. Mrs. Eddy always rose so high in Christly consciousness that she could "*pass over*" error, and thus overcome the illusions of mortal mind.

In Christian Science we know there is no one through whom hatred can be expressed, for there is only the *ONE*, the one Being, which I AM, and which you are. If a million people were directing hate toward you, could it touch you? Of course not. It is only an error in thought. The million are just a big zero, and the hate cannot exist because there is only *ONE* (*divine Love*), infinitely individual-

ized as you and me and as everyone else. Most of us are asleep in the Adam dream and do not know we are that One, individualized, expressing all infinite good's qualities and perfect activity.

So when it seems that great obstacles and ordeals lie between us and the Holy Grail of understanding we seek, we should remember the "Pass-over" Moses ate with his followers on the eve of their departure from Egyptian bondage, and the "pass-over" Christ Jesus ate with his disciples at the last supper, on the eve of his crucifixion. Jesus' passover was followed by his resurrection and ascension. Both Moses and Christ Jesus had been assured of a safe "passover" from mortal mind's verdict. They had been assured of the immortality and ever-presence of Truth and Love, scripturally called the "promised land."*

The jeweled thread of victory over lack, fear, sin, disease, death, over all materiality, runs throughout the Bible. For Moses the "passover" included safe passage—manna in the wilderness, water from the rocks, a beckoning pillar of cloud by day, a guiding light by night; safe passage through the Red Sea. Throughout the long and perilous journey, it included the consciousness and the proof of infinite good's presence.

Encouragement and inspiration is gained from reading the mighty Exodus from Egyptian slavery. The Exodus stands out in history as proof of the invincible power of right to deliver and preserve a nation as well as an individual. It helps us understand Jesus' teaching at the last supper when he "said unto them, With desire have I desired to eat this *passover* with you before I suffer" (Luke 22:15).

Jesus had prophesied the *PASS OVER* when he promised the "Comforter," the Second Coming of the Christ, that would enable all mankind to learn how to *PASS OVER* the illusions of error, unharmed. He was convinced of the immortality of his words and his prophecies. He foresaw that his words would finally be accepted, and would

*A devout American Christian desiring to see Leonardo da Vinci's famous painting of "The Last Supper," asked directions in Milan. Not speaking Italian, he sketched the well-known scene and showed the drawing to passers-by, and twice was directed to a nearby restaurant.

constitute the *pass over* for you and me and all. Jesus knew he was *passing over* the valley of the shadow of death, to the “promised land” of the “Comforter,” the Christ Science which constitutes our marriage with infinite good.

How Jesus would have loved to have taken his dearly beloved disciples along with him on his passover. He knew his mission on earth was to overcome death and the grave, and so prove Life to be eternal, immortal. He knew he would be *passing over* the dark shadows of persecution and death. He yearned to spare his disciples the agony, the torment of all that the material senses would have them believe. He wanted, above all, to share with them what he knew was to be his everlasting victory, “his mighty, crowning, unparalleled, and triumphant exit from the flesh” and his wedding with infinite good, as “he made himself the Son of God” through knowing that his own Mind was God.

Of all the disciples, only John caught this Christly message of the *pass over* enough to rise sufficiently above the material sense testimony to follow Jesus all the way to the foot of the cross. In that dark hour it must have been of great comfort to Jesus to have John there so Jesus could place his dear mother in John’s care.

Because John thought only of Jesus, and not of himself he had the Christ-qualities to which Jesus could later give the great Revelation. This Revelation would tell all mankind about the woman of the Apocalypse, and the “little book,” Science and Health, that would teach humanity how to “*PASS OVER*” material sense testimony.

Because the Book of Revelation is about Christian Science and the Second Coming of the Christ, Jesus’ great Revelation to St. John could not be understood until Mary Baker Eddy appeared on earth and fulfilled Jesus’ prophecy and promise. Today when we realize how accurate and true Jesus’ prophecy and revelation to St. John was, it gives fresh assurance that all the other incidents and prophecies of the prophets and the life of Jesus are correct and true.

Like John, we all must learn to think not of ourselves but of how we can best follow in the footsteps of the *two witnesses*, *Christ Jesus and Mary Baker Eddy*, who revealed and demonstrated the Fa-

therhood and Motherhood of infinite good.

The spiritual altitude of Mary Baker Eddy's writing has given us the key to the *PASS OVER* from matter to Spirit so that we can learn the truth about ourselves, learn what we already really are, and see ourselves as wedded to the infinite good we call God.

All mankind is destined to learn how to accomplish this passage from sense to Soul, God. Eventually we will all learn how to *pass over* the illusions with which material sense would bog us down. Mortal mind would have us believe we are mortals. How long must we struggle with this belief? Our real Mind "is the divine intelligence, or Principle of all real being [that holds] man forever in the rhythmic round of unfolding bliss, as a living witness to and perpetual idea of inexhaustible good" (*Mis.* 82:31).

Oh, that Mrs. Eddy could have stayed with us, as she wrote:
 Stay! till the storms are o'er -
 The cold blast done,
 The reign of heaven begun,...

At least we can take comfort in knowing that Mrs. Eddy is one with what she has written and that it will unfold forever. We can walk the holy highway with saints and angels because we have her writings to lead us forward, onward, upward.

To really follow our Leader as she followed Christ must be our most sincere desire. To do this we must lose ourselves in true being; lose ourselves in love for all mankind. We must do as Noah did. He entered into the ark. He closed the door on the deluge of mortal mind's illusions and abode there until the floods of mortal-mind's thinking subsided.

For us, as for Noah, making the passover means passing over wrong beliefs, our mortal mind illusions. We must keep before us the vision of reality as we partake of the *pass over* with Christ. Let us never forget that only *GROWTH IN CHRISTIAN CHARACTER* is needed. By studying "thoroughly the letter and imbibing the spirit" we assimilate more of the divine character until "the fiery baptism...burns up the chaff of error with the fervent heat of Truth and Love, melting and purifying even the gold of human character."

CHAPTER XIV

“THE MANUAL WILL SAVE THE CAUSE”

The Facts Surrounding the Cradle

Have we the slightest idea how Mrs. Eddy for years patiently laboured and listened for God’s voice, in order to bring this Science with its system to the world, as the Second Coming of the Christ? She had to record the revelation in such a way that it would not be seen until thought was ready to receive it. When we give Mary Baker Eddy her rightful place in human and divine history we are not deifying her anymore than we deify Jesus when we accord him his rightful recognition.

Writing a hundred years ago, Mrs. Eddy advised Christian Science students in the twentieth century “to turn backward the telescope...on the early footsteps of Christian Science...to con [know, fix in mind] the facts surrounding the cradle of this grand verity [of our marriage to God]...and to scan further the features of the vast problem of eternal life...” (*Pul.* vii:11). As we look at the early progress of Christian Science, we quickly discover that Mrs. Eddy saw church organization as a temporary phase which Christian Science should quickly outgrow.

Mrs. Eddy’s mission began with her discovery of “the great fact that [she has] since tried to make plain to others, namely, Life in and of Spirit; this Life [in and of Spirit] being the sole reality of existence” (*Mis.* 24:14).

In 1879 Mrs. Eddy allowed a church to be formed as a “suffer it to be so now,” to meet the demands of her students who were

accustomed to going to church on Sunday. Ten years later, in 1889, she dissolved that church. The dissolution was followed by exceptional growth and prosperity. But students wanted to organize again. Mrs. Eddy strongly opposed this move. She told them it “was not of God,” and that they were “selling their present prosperity for a mess of pottage.” However, when the students were adamant, she reluctantly gave consent. Mrs. Eddy warns that “continued organization retards spiritual growth, and should be laid off,—even as the corporeal organization deemed requisite in the first stages of mortal existence is finally laid off, in order to gain spiritual freedom and supremacy” (*Ret.* 45:9). These words remind us that in Christian Science material organization is equivalent to mortal existence. We need to shake off the shackles of the illusory matter world whether this material organization is in the form of a church or of a mortal body. It is something we must wean ourselves away from if we are not to be buried in it, and if we are to wed ourselves to infinite good.

Mary Baker Eddy had no intention of leaving a corporeal organization in place. With the love that yearns, she founded Christian Science in human consciousness. Then, to protect her Christian Science and to prevent her students from being trapped forever, she wrote her *Church Manual*. Its object was to prevent the church from sliding or freezing into a self-defeating ecclesiasticism. Prior to the appointment of a 5th director, the work of copyrighting the *Manual*, etc. was left to others. But once a 5th director had been appointed—a move God had shown her as a way to terminate material organization—Mrs. Eddy personally took full charge of overseeing the *Manual* and its copyright. The 88th *Manual* is her final *Manual*. It provided the means for students of Christian Science to move forward out of corporeal organization.

The *Manual* stipulated that Mary Baker Eddy’s approval, consent and signature “in her own handwriting” were required for the filling of various offices. Had the *Manual* been obeyed, it would have dissolved the material church organization six months after Mrs. Eddy’s leaving, because at the June meeting no officer of The Mother Church could have been elected.

Flagrant disobedience to her *Manual* estoppels has today temporarily curtailed the wonderful instantaneous Christian Science healings, so general up until the late 1940's. But this too is in accordance with Jesus' prophecy to St. John, when in the Book of Revelation (Rev. 12:12) he prophesied "...the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth he hath but a short time." "Scripture," Jesus said, "cannot be broken." We can take comfort in knowing that when obedience to Mary Baker Eddy's *Manual* estoppels is again established, the healing that was so universal in Mrs. Eddy's day will return. There is far more in the *Manual* than has yet been seen. "...eternity awaits our Church Manual" (*My*. 230:2).

Mrs. Eddy left a perfect plan, built into the By-Laws of the *Manual AS SHE LEFT IT*, to bring us out of *material* organization. The Mother Church should have dissolved with Mrs. Eddy's passing. Unable to obtain her approval, consent, and signature "in her own handwriting," required for filling various offices, it should have reverted to its status as a branch church, with the branch church title Mrs. Eddy had given it: "The First Church of Christ, Scientist." Then, since the membership of Readers would have had to date from 1910 or before, The First Church of Christ, Scientist, along with all the other branch churches, should have continued only until such time as it could no longer fulfil the requirements regarding "Readers (*Manual* page 32). According to the *Manual* only someone near 100 years old could be a Reader today since they had to be members of The Mother Church, which ended when Mary Baker Eddy left. Societies could continue as long as needed. It is clear that all Christian Science branch churches should have been dissolved by this time. All this is brought out in my two books on the *CHURCH MANUAL*. Had these provisions, made by Mrs. Eddy, been carried out, Christian Scientists would by now have been freed from the *DRAGON* of material organization—free to bless and uplift the

A primary purpose of my books on the *Manual* is through Mrs. Eddy's writings the governing error of organization," and to uncover the steps Mrs. Eddy took f

By following those steps—which show us the only certain way forward—we demonstrate the continuity of The Church of Christ, Scientist. Then “the structure of Truth and Love [in our consciousness]” is assured. (See *My*. 342:19).

The Fallacy of Corporeal Organization

“The *Manual* will save the Cause,” Mrs. Eddy told Professor Hering. It will do so by sweeping away the ecclesiastical hierarchy which has stifled spiritual progress. It will establish government by God.

The bondage begun in 1910 has had repercussions that can be felt today. The Directors in the saddle at Mrs. Eddy’s passing in 1910 were wilfully disobedient when they refused to obey her *Manual’s* instructions to return to a four-member Board with no authority over anything except the First Church of Christ, Scientist, in Boston. Just think of it! Their disobedience and the continuing disobedience of subsequent Boards has in many ways kept us from recognizing or becoming aware of our *WHOLENESS*, our oneness with God, our marriage to God.

A Christian Science teacher who has done a monumental work in the “Glossary” in *Science and Health* pointed out that the Board who disobeyed Mrs. Eddy’s *Manual* instructions in 1910 represented I AM,” Noah’s *disobedient* son. “Ham” is defined in the Glossary (&H 587:21) as: “Corporeal belief [corporeal organization]; sensuality; slavery; tyranny.” HAM’S son was “CANAAN” (S&H 582:24). He followed in his father’s disobedient footsteps, just as subsequent Boards of Directors have followed in the 1910 Board’s disobedient steps. Mrs. Eddy defines “Canaan” as: “A sensuous belief, the enemy of that which is termed material sense; the error that would make man mortal [material organization], and would make mortal a slave to the body.” This Christian Science teacher pointed out when the Board (representing “Ham”) in 1910 disobeyed Mrs. Eddy’s *Manual*, they set an example, just as “Ham” had set an example for his son, “Canaan.” And subsequent Boards, after presenting “Canaan,” have followed, exactly as Canaan fol-

had its pastures watered by those asleep to the dangers of hierarchical control. But today, after a crescendo of challenges from the biblical “remnant” and a long overdue tidal wave of anti-Boston sentiment that swept the world—a reform seems on its way, as noted by the publishing of the Bliss Knapp book and the promised returning of other biographies favorable to Mrs. Eddy to the Reading Rooms. Loyal Christian Scientists are happy to see this change, knowing it is destined to free the Christian Science movement from the shackles of material organization.

Do we today see the opportunity that knocked when the terminated five-member ecclesiastical Board broke Mrs. Eddy’s Deed of Trust to the Publishing Society, circa 1920? Do we see the silver lining that surrounded the litigation cloud?

The church organization was split wide open by the confluence of forces. Because of the Directors’ ugly breaking of Mrs. Eddy’s 1898 Trust Deed to the Publishing Trustees, thousands of Christian Scientists turned away from the material church organization. The ten-year struggle of the Publishing Trustees against the greed of ecclesiasticism—that would seize everything in the line of power and authority—freed Christian Science from the materiality of organization and loosed it for its higher destiny of pure metaphysics “uncontaminated and unfettered by human hypotheses and divinely authorized.” Our spiritual journey has nothing to do with a church building or attending church services. Do we now see the blessing in the break from material church activity which started when the ecclesiastical hierarchy won that lawsuit? Had they *not* won it, the break with material organization would have been much slower. Do we see how in freeing all mankind from the handcuffs of the old orthodox form of church-going, it freed each Christian Scientist to “be a law to himself”? Do we now see how it compels each sincere Christian Scientist to find the kingdom of God within his own consciousness?

At the time that ecclesiasticism seemed to win in what has been called “the great litigation,” circa 1920, we thought animal magnetism had been victorious when the ecclesiastical Directors won. But today we see that this event opened wide the door to escape from

material organization—from what Mrs. Eddy never wanted to establish in the first place. It awakened the biblical “remnant,” urging them to tell the truth concerning the lie; to bring to light the deeper truths in Mary Baker Eddy’s writings, and to go forward in spiritual organization alone. All this has been gathering momentum since 1920—since the ecclesiastical hierarchy won the lawsuit, proving once more, that “the very circumstance which your suffering sense deems wrathful and afflictive, Love can make an angel entertained unawares.”

The activity of Truth in our consciousness is the Christ that brings about these needed changes. Speak your mind, even if your voice shakes. Well-aimed slingshots can topple giants. A cleaning woman said to the doctor, “I reckon you get paid right handsome for looking after that rich Johnson boy.”

“Why, yes. I get pretty good fees,” replied the doctor somewhat amused. “Why do you ask?”

“I just hope you won’t forget that it was my boy what threw the brick that hit him.”

It becomes increasingly clear regarding today’s turmoil—which was prophesied (Rev. 12:12)—that if the *religious* aspect of Christian Science had been allowed to prosper as in the old days, we would not have been forced to begin to accept the scientific sense of Christian Science that is today coming to the front as we begin to see the “system” in the Science, in our textbook.

This *scientific* sense is travailing in the hardship and throes of birth, resisted by ecclesiasticism “with falsities painful to behold.” But the Science that came with the Second Coming of the Christ will triumph. Spiritual progress has always called for absolute trust in spiritual means and the abandonment of all that would seem logical to mortal mind. As Mrs. Eddy’s *Manual*, which dissolved the material organization, is obeyed, the church will evolve out of material organization naturally, and the Christian Science Publishing Society will be free to pursue what Mrs. Eddy intended. Christ’s Church will find the spiritual freedom that will bless all mankind as we “scan further the features of the vast problem of eternal life as expressed in

the absolute power of Truth and the actual bliss of man's existence in Science" (*Pul.* vii:19).

Eventually, as the Mary Baker Eddy drama unfolds and the teaching of our loving Leader is better understood, we will "all meet on common ground in the great essentials of love to God and love to man as a signal proof of the divine origin of humanity which finds no rest until it finds the peace of the Lord in spirituality" (Newspaper article, see *Pul.* 39:1). Attitude, determination, discipline, dedication in learning the God-character are our ladder to oneness with God. Those who climb this ladder may be materially poor, but they are spiritually rich.

Government in the U.S. today

It is not only in religion that material organization needs to be laid off. Evolution in the spiritual realm calls for similar evolution in every other earthly institution. The admonition that "continued organization retards spiritual growth," certainly applies to nations. The author, in her book *America*, outlines how the societal and governmental opening up which occurred in the New World, made possible Mary Baker Eddy's revelation. It is to be fervently hoped that secular government will continue to move toward individual freedom and responsibility until it can disappear.

A friend writes: "The whole purpose and mission of the United States of America is Christian Science." Columbus was divinely directed to discover America so it could become the cradle for Mary Baker Eddy's great spiritual discovery *that our own Mind is God*, so that we, like Jesus, could "[make ourselves] the Son of God." No where else on earth, and never before in history, was there an environment ready for the advent of Mary Baker Eddy, until after the discovery of America.

But if the early history of the United States shows how the easing of rigid hierarchy in government allows the blooming of the human spirit, recent history shows how burgeoning material organization in the form of bureaucracy can stifle the spirit that honors God.

Mary Baker Eddy's divine instruction: "Christian Scientists be a law to yourselves..." is causing today's discontent with outgrown, limiting laws and methods, and the dismantling of big government. Our work is to know that those who seem to direct the destiny of nations have no other mind than the Mind that is infinite good, called God.

The danger facing America is well presented by Malcolm Wallup's warning: "Today America is in danger of becoming a nation of favor-seekers and dependents. Her political leaders as well as her ordinary citizens must recover their once widely shared and deep commitment to personal responsibility and independence. Today's government touches almost everything in America and harms almost everything it touches.... Those who do the taxing and spending have long since ceased to work for the people as a whole."

Welfare offers an insidious temptation to young people reluctant to face the responsibilities of growing up.

"Most Americans sense that our ever-rising taxes are feeding a machine hostile to our values....that big government has largely deprived us of self-government....It has developed an arrogance of power that leads to the delusion that they are above the law."

"Tinkering with this and that detail (policy wonkmanishp) cannot make big government user-friendly. Nor will it do much good to reinvent government—that is, make its operations more slender and efficient. If one accepts the premise of big government its clients will turn every reform into an excuse to *grow*. Nor can it do much good to make sure that big government is run by good people with the best intentions....'Power corrupts, and absolute power corrupts absolutely.'"

This is exactly what happened when Mrs. Eddy's *Manual* estoppels were flagrantly disobeyed. The dispossessed five-member board quickly seized control of the Publishing Society in order to have the means to perpetuate themselves as Mrs. Eddy's successor. To restore self-government and personal responsibility, big government, whether church government or the government of nations, must simply be gotten out of the way.

It's Time To Throw the Book at Crime

Fortunately there are signs that this is happening. The writings of Mary Baker Eddy, alias the Second Coming of the Christ, are transforming the universe. The modern world has ended. We are going through a transitional period. Something is on its way out, and something else is being painfully born. As we move toward the 21st century, Christian Science is more and more driving error—including the political monsters who are terrorizing our world—from under cover, out into the open where error can be seen and dealt with as the lie that it is. As we emerge from the cobwebs of ecclesiasticism and enter the minefield of turbulent times, every Christian Scientist should leap to the front to reassure tired humanity that all we ever need is to get our eyes opened to the truth of being.

Error today is showing itself, as many indexes of social well-being are exploding in the *WRONG* direction: from the number of children in foster care to the teen birth rate; from hospital cocaine episodes to juvenile arrests; from the growth of government regulations to record employment layoffs. It is showing itself forth in a staggering boom in self-indulgence; in endless examples of bad taste and vulgarity like the recent flood of shameless citizens sharing degrading personal divulgences on T.V. and other news media.

“Everything is changing,” said Will Rogers, “people are taking their comedians seriously and their politicians as a joke.” Rewarding hard work? We have seen the American ethic turned on its head. For far too long those who play by the rules and keep the faith have gotten the shaft. For many people, the striving to get ahead has now given way to a life or death struggle simply to stay afloat. As the rich get richer and the rest get poorer, many people seem to be giving up on the traditional values that represent the true strength of our society.

In the face of what feels like a societal breakdown, we are finally learning that the traditional response—loading up our already titanic bureaucracies with more deck chairs—will not solve anything. We are seeing the twilight of the Welfare State. This should not be

allowed to mean rewarding the greedy and forsaking the needy, but the handwriting is on the wall. In spite of the trillions spent on welfare there are more people in poverty now than when the “Great Society” began thirty years ago. Money isn’t the answer—learning spiritually what you *ARE*—that “thou art made whole”—is the answer. We all need to turn more to the spiritual.

On a visit to the United States, Gorbachev took a walk. A little girl stepped up to him with a pair of kittens. “Sir,” she said, “would you like to pet them? They are Communist kittens.” The Soviet leader was so amused that later in the week he brought President Bush to see the child. “Tell your President about your kittens,” Gorbachev told her.

“They’re Democratic kittens,” she said, beaming.

“What?” Gorbachev thundered, “Before, you said they were Communist kittens.”

“Yes,” replied the girl. “But now they have their eyes open.”

Mrs. Eddy would have agreed with the child. She spoke out strongly against “the bad tendencies of Socialism,” which is a parasitic system that eventually exhausts its host. It cannot succeed because the producers must not only support the non-producing beneficiaries but also the bureaucracy assembled to administer the transfer payments. Socialism is a system for robbing the productive to support armies of overpaid bureaucrats who throw the leftovers to the indigent, and those who have “fallen among thieves.”

As the last bastion of the Socialist revolution—the Welfare state—faces bankruptcy and extinction, its demise may bring a social revolution on a scale unimaginable by all but historians. Joycelyn Elders, former U.S. Surgeon general, tells us that the “crime and wretchedness from drugs continues to escalate; that in the past ten years we have gone from 300,000 prisoners to 1.3 *million*.” The misery, desolation, and sorrow this entails will drive people to seek refuge in a more spiritual way of life—to learn that whatever their human situation seems to be, whatever mortal mind is telling them negatively, is not true.

Each can be transformed

God is the only Mind; God is our real Mind; there is only God to meet us. Each one of us, *right now*, is literally the presence of God in human form; each one *is* worthy, cherished, accepted. Each of us, like St. Paul, can be transformed.

Paul was the personified intellectual. Imbued with a fanatic purpose to persecute the Christians, he did great evil. In Acts 22:4-15 he tells how he malignantly pursued the Christians “unto the death, binding and delivering into prisons both men and women...[how he] went to Damascus, to bring them which were bound unto Jerusalem to be *punished*.”

But what happened on the way to Damascus? “Suddenly there shone from heaven a great light round about me. I fell to the ground, and heard a voice saying unto me, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? And I answered, Who art thou, Lord? And he said unto me, I am Jesus of Nazareth, whom thou persecutest....And I said, What shall I do, Lord? And the Lord said unto me, Arise, and go into Damascus; and there it shall be told thee of all things which are appointed for thee to do. And when I could not see for the glory of that light, being led by the hand of them that were with me [who also had seen the great light], I came unto Damascus. And one Ananias, a devout man came to me, and stood, and said unto me, Brother Saul, receive thy sight. And the same hour I looked upon him. And he said, The God of our fathers *hath chosen thee* that thou shouldest know his will....For thou shalt be his witness unto all men of what thou hast seen and heard.”

Thus it was that dear, blessed St. Paul became the great apostle to the Gentiles; and nearly half of the New Testament is devoted to his holy ministry.

The greatness of St. Paul lay in the fact that he proclaimed Jesus' holy authority, just as all loyal Christian Scientists should proclaim Mary Baker Eddy's divine authority in this age. What would have happened to Jesus' great work and example without Paul's hal-

lowed devotion to explain and carry it forward?

Why was Paul chosen? Because he was humble, teachable, and earnestly wanted to do God's will. The same qualities that made Paul great abide in each one of us—even in someone who is a criminal—ready to spring forth when we are confronted as Paul was on the road to Damascus. He was the arbiter of his own fate.

Spiritual and Material Progress

As the pain and uncertainty of the world force mortals to turn from this mortal and material dream to the true sense of reality, we will become aware of our Christ nature, our oneness with God. In reality, wonderful things are taking place. "If spiritual sense always guided [us] there would grow out of *ecstatic* moments a higher experience and a better life..." (S&H 7:18).

The same process that forced St. Paul to know the Truth, and is now forcing us to do likewise, also acts on nations. Eventually "rightness" will be compelled into life by pressure from a wide range of citizens dissatisfied with the direction our country is going.

Much is good in the current picture. When the handwringing over America's moral decline is done, we have to admit that genuine progress has been made during the past 50 years. Our society, in many ways, is today freer, more equal and more just than it was 50 years ago. Americans are freer to marry or not to marry, to bear children or not to; and women have entered many of the professions formerly reserved for men.

Millions today would love to come to America to enjoy our wonderful religious freedom, our separation of church and state. Yet there are well-meaning people who believe that by making "Christianity" the *law* of the land through a constitutional amendment, they can stem the social and moral breakdown they see around them.

We know just the opposite is true. People cannot be legislated into Godliness. The kingdom is within. It cannot be imposed from without by bureaucratic fiat. Only by freeing people, encour-

aging and educating them to become what they truly already *ARE*, can we transform society.

Misguided zealots crusading to break down the church-state protections enshrined in the Bill of Rights remind one of General Hooker who replaced McClellan during the Civil War. Wanting to create the impression of vigorous activity, General Hooker reported his movements in a dispatch headed: "Headquarters in the saddle."

"The trouble with Hooker," Lincoln remarked, "is that he has his headquarters where his hindquarters should be."

Many of these zealots are ready to manipulate any situation to their end, like the evangelist exhorting his hearers to flee from the wrath to come. "I warn you," he thundered, "there will be weeping, and wailing and gnashing of teeth!" An old woman in the gallery stood up. "Sir," she shouted, "I have no teeth." "Madam," returned the evangelist, "teeth will be provided."

In a crowded church, a nervous, tongue-tied usher hastened up to a lady disconcerted at being unable to occupy her usual place. "Mardon me, padam," he said, "this pie is occupewd. May I sew you to another sheet?" Those who oppose our God-inspired "separation of church and state" would like to sew us to another sheet.

Clearly transformation is needed. Revelation 12:12, which prophesied of the devil's activity, is indeed being fulfilled. Today it seems almost a "peasants with pitchforks" battle, yet here again we see that "when these things cease to bless they will cease to occur." The blessing will come as pain and turmoil force people to become receptive to their oneness with God, infinite good, and to awaken to the kingdom of heaven within their consciousness.

There can be no question but that the trials of life force mankind to forsake matter with its false pleasures and pains for the joys of Soul [spiritual understanding; true Christ identity.] Why is there suffering? Suffering forces us to awake to true being. The hour has struck for spiritual progress; and spiritual progress begins when we are no longer preoccupied with human good and human evil, but are able to penetrate beyond these to our true and present Christhood.

Today's wide-spread poverty, homelessness, loneliness and

despair, the many divorces with their crushing grief, the intense sorrow, anguish, and distress entailed as homes are broken and families split up—these vexations cause mortals to yearn for a higher, more spiritual life. A haunting hunger, the “immortal cravings” for higher enjoyments, bring about receptivity for more and more spiritual teaching, leading us higher and higher spiritually.

Often what we think is animal magnetism turns out in the long run to be a blessing in disguise. Once we understand Mrs. Eddy’s great revelation that only good is real, while evil is unreal, illusion only, we will understand why Jesus said, “Resist not evil.” The pain, heartache, loneliness, or longing that waits in ambush, disappears as we fill our thoughts with gratitude and praise when we realize that evil, error of any kind, is illusion, hypnotic suggestion. Then we will not resist it as though it were real. We will treat it the same way we treat $2 \times 2 = 5$, because we have learned the truth. Mrs. Eddy’s writings have opened our eyes. We are learning that matter is only the solid form of mortal thought, of illusions, as ice is the solid form of water.

Mrs. Eddy discovered the great secret back of Jesus’ words: “Resist not evil.” When the disciples told Jesus, “Even the devils are subject unto us,” Jesus was quick to tell them to rejoice because they had been taught that there was no evil. The sense of evil is only illusion, hypnotic suggestion. Only the lying five physical senses contradict the truth that infinite good’s law is the only cause, the only power. “Resist not evil.” Tune in to what God is saying, and tune out error’s twaddle; it is merely an illusion, and we don’t resist an illusion. Our real Mind that is Love causes us to awaken to see evil’s nothingness.

We are no longer surprised by the waves of crime that seem to be inundating the world today. We even joke about them. Overheard in New York: “This is a great town; it’s the only place where you can park your car, walk two blocks and find your tires on sale.”

Nor should we be surprised. After all, it was prophesied in Jesus’ Revelation to St. John (Rev. 12:12) that after the woman had brought forth the “man child”—infinite good’s message to mankind,

the Second Coming of the Christ—there would be great tribulation: “Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and to the sea! for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, for he knoweth he hath but a short time.”

Regarding this prophecy Mary Baker Eddy writes: “Marvels, calamities, and sin will much more abound as truth urges upon mortals its resisted claims; but the awful daring of sin destroys sin, and foreshadows the triumph of Truth. God will overturn, until “He come whose right it is” (S&H 223:28).

Again she explains:

“The broadest facts array the most falsities against themselves, for they bring error from under cover....The breaking up of material beliefs may seem to be famine and pestilence, want and woe, sin, sickness, and death, which assume new phases until their nothingness appears. These disturbances will continue until the end of error...[but] as material knowledge diminishes and spiritual understanding increases, real objects will be apprehended mentally instead of materially” (S&H pp. 97, 96).

A Philadelphia woman, lunching with friends, listened to descriptions of the elaborate alarm systems and tie-ups with police stations, the guard dogs and what-not that her friends had turned to as protection against burglars. Asked what steps she had taken, she pointed out that she had five small children. “If a burglar came into my bedroom,” she said, wearily, “I’d probably get up, take him by the hand and lead him to the bathroom.”

Man Born of the Spirit Is Spiritual

Documents page 132 says, “Jesus showed that dying didn’t kill us, and Mrs. Eddy showed that “*being born doesn’t cause us to live.*” The first two sentences of the scientific statement of being, (S&H 468:9) stating that “There is no life, truth, intelligence nor substance in matter. [that] All is infinite Mind and its infinite manifestation,” begin the most wonderful paragraph in any language. It will revolutionize human consciousness.

The truth in this remarkable statement *is* man, for man—having no mind but God—is the understanding of God. In other words, man isn't something that *knows* God. “*Knowing* God [infinite good, our real Mind, having the *character* of God] *is being* man,” for they are one—“Principle and its idea is one.”

There is not God *and* man. There is only infinite Mind (your real Mind) manifested. What looks like you, and everyone, is God in disguise, Love made visible. There is only *ONE*. Why? Because “God is All.” God is Mind. Whose Mind? Your real Mind. Therefore “All is infinite Mind and *its* infinite manifestation, for God is All-in-all.” The manifestation is your real Mind’s manifestation. Spirit (which Mrs. Eddy in the first edition tells you, you are) is immortal Truth, (which again, she has told you, you are). Matter, on the other hand, is the unreal and temporal. Spirit (again, what you are) is God, and what is called man would therefore be your image and likeness. The secret of Christian Science is that God appears as you and me. When I look at you, I am seeing God in disguise. Thus Mrs. Eddy could say: “You, my students, are God.”

There is only *ONE*. Christ is the full manifestation of the divine Mind, your Mind or Principle. All there is, to any situation, in reality, is Principle in operation. With Mary Baker Eddy’s unsealing of this great truth, we learn that our harmony *already IS*; all that God is, we are, having the Mind of God. It is educational to look up Mrs. Eddy’s several hundred references to “harmony” in Science and Health. It will reveal to us the harmony and intelligence already within us.

Comprehending this great truth—actually understanding it—causes whatever is wrong to fall away. Though thousands of years of traditional thinking hinders our acceptance of our present divinity, let’s not go back to yesterday’s manna. The spiritual facts are learned step by step as we follow the spiritual byway that teaches us what we are as Mind, Spirit, Soul, Principle, Life, Truth, and Love.

“Centuries will intervene before the topics of [Science and Health] become sufficiently understood to be absolutely demonstrated” (*Mis.* 92:4). The relative is only to help us who are ignorant

of our God-being. But, Mrs. Eddy said, “having perceived, in advance of others, the scientific fact of our present perfection, we owe to ourselves and to the world a struggle for its demonstration.” This is what we must at least *try* to do, get out of the relative and into the Truth about ourselves. This is what Mary Baker Eddy did and what each loyal Christian Scientist should strive to do.

As our Wayshower, Mrs. Eddy surely did struggle for its demonstration! Think of this carefully. How much of a struggle are we making to demonstrate the absolute unreality of matter in its bearing upon our individual experience? “The cares of the world,” Jesus said...“and the lusts of other things entering in, choke the word, and it becometh unfruitful.” Putting off doing what we are now capable of doing, that we may satisfy our desire for self-ease a little longer, will only serve to strengthen the tenacity of error. “Habits are first cobwebs, then cables.”

All through Jesus’ career he was proving the unreality of material evidence, although few of those who saw these proofs were ready to perceive or admit the great fact of materiality’s unreality. Mrs. Eddy, in bringing the Second Coming of the Christ, encountered the same resistance Jesus encountered.

Every Christian Scientist should be a pioneer opening up the spiritual Age. As we find its message of glory already within our consciousness, we should herald it to all the world. Worse than gullibility and apathy is *silence*. Clouds of secrecy are the killing winds that leave a trail of tears. Therefore Mrs. Eddy urged, “Let the Word have free course and be glorified. The people clamor to leave cradle and swaddling-clothes” (*No.* 45:24).

Jesus and Mary Baker Eddy have invited us to stand beside them and see for ourselves what they saw spiritually—see for ourselves the opening of new spiritual frontiers. Today civilization no longer needs to open up a wilderness; it needs “wilderness” to open up new spiritual frontiers of the Mind—“Wilderness [as defined by Mary Baker Eddy]: Spontaneity of thought and idea; the vestibule in which a material sense of things disappears, and spiritual sense unfolds the great facts of being” (S&H 597:16).

As we accept the “great facts” we “[make ourselves] the Son of God.” We find ourselves made whole, forever wedded to the infinite good we call God.

“The Science of Truth”

WE FIND GOD, INFINITE GOOD, our real selfhood, in the pages of Science and Health whose “leaves are for the *healing* of the nations”—meaning for the healing of all that is not in accord with “all-harmonious” God-like thinking.

Mary Baker Eddy, who brought this comforting assurance, came, like the Virgin Mary and Jesus, in fulfillment of scriptural prophecy. Jesus, before leaving this world, promised “another Comforter” that will “abide with you forever; even the Spirit of truth” (John xiv: 16,17). Strong’s Bible Concordance translates the “Spirit of truth” as “the Science of Truth.” Two thousand years ago, in Jesus’ time, the people were not ready for this “Spirit,” this “Science of Truth.” Indeed Jesus described it as one “whom the world cannot receive because it seeth him not [seeth not this Spirit of truth] neither knoweth this Spirit [this Science] of truth.”

But today, because Mary Baker Eddy’s work on earth brought the Second Coming of the Christ, we can “learn” it, and so “receive” this “Spirit of truth”—this “Science of Truth.” The basic error, of course, is accepting the misconception, the illusion, that you are a person with a human mind. Accepting suggestions of mortal mind and believing spurious hypnotic presentations is what Mrs. Eddy called malpractice.

Our work is to reform *OURSELVES*, not what we behold. Our strength in *reforming ourselves* and gaining the God-character lies in our tenacity. Remember, by perseverance the snail made it to the Ark. (Smile.)

Mary Baker Eddy showed us how to find our real God-selfhood. She helped mankind to help themselves and set themselves free. She came to teach that in reality we are Life and Truth and Love, expressed in joyous aspiration, health, holiness, peace, and “the

elegance of honesty that needs no adornment.” She showed us how to have these more abundantly. She has set before us “an open door, and no man can shut it, and going on therein...is fullness of joy.”

Documents, page 136: Talking to several students, Mrs. Eddy said, “You will heal instantaneously when you *BELIEVE* what you say.” Jesus, explaining his disciples’ failure to heal, said, “Because of your unbelief.”

“Just where mortal mind says ‘I can’t,’ you must know, ‘I can.’” Turn away from error—this varmint in the shrubbery—and as you turn away from everything unGodlike know in the most positive way that God, infinite good, knows no such thing.

Mrs. Eddy Healed Instantly

Documents, page 142 describes how Mrs. Eddy was once called to heal a four-year old boy dying of consumption. “The child was so emaciated his bones could be counted through the skin. To reach the child Mrs. Eddy had to pass through a room where the father was lying in bed helpless from the same dread disease. The daughter who was sitting with her father was deaf. Mrs. Eddy went to the little boy, and the mother left them alone. When the mother returned in a few minutes her child ran toward her laughing and looking the picture of health, and as Mrs. Eddy described him, ‘with his cheeks sticking out like two rosy apples.’ The child’s emaciated form had been replaced with a normal body. When the mother stepped to the other room she saw her husband sitting on the side of the bed, a well man, and her daughter was holding her hands to her ears to shut out the sounds she could now hear.”

It was healings like this that spread Christian Science around the world during Mrs. Eddy’s time and for forty years following, on the momentum she had built up. “Lost in the eminence of Mind, Mrs. Eddy had seen only the omnipresence of present perfection.” Nemi Robertson says that “after telling of this healing, Mrs. Eddy said, ‘Divine Love alone can heal, and to know that *GOD IS ALL* covers the whole ground.’ When Mrs. Eddy said this she seemed

transfigured and glorified. It was wonderful!"

To another student Mary Baker Eddy said, "I walk the earth in the atmosphere of Love which holds me in spiritual gravitation. The Love that I reflect repels every error of mortal mind, for Love is the only law and Love is all activity. Love fills all channels and expels all error. Love purifies, inspires, protects, and satisfies. Love contains, Love maintains, Love sustains, Love does liberate, unbind, unseal and deliver; naught can hinder Love. Love supplies with perfect freedom; Love furnishes, provides, adorns with great liberty. Love glows, warms, shines, lights with its rays of glory; Love illumines, irradiates, beams with resplendent brilliancy. Love is the only and all of spiritual attainment in spiritual growth. Without it, healing is not done and cannot be, either morally or physically. Every advanced step will show you this until victory is won and you possess no other consciousness but divine Love" (A Carpenter item).

Abigail Dyer Thompson recalls that Mrs. Eddy confided, "I saw the love of God encircling the universe and man, filling all space, and that divine Love so permeated my own consciousness that I loved with Christlike compassion everything I saw. This realization of divine Love called into expression 'the beauty of holiness, the perfection of being,' which healed and regenerated and saved all who turned to me for help." She continues, "The way our Leader said the word 'love' made me feel that she must have loved even a blade of grass under her feet.

"My mother used to speak of an experience that Mrs. Eddy once told her, of walking along the street and coming upon a cripple piling wood. As she passed him she touched him on the shoulder and said, 'God loves you,' and instantly the man was healed." At another time, seeing a cripple, Mrs. Eddy said, "My heart gushed with unspeakable pity and prayer." Again the crippled man was instantaneously healed.

In healing a patient Mrs. Eddy often became conscious only of Life, Truth, and Love and totally unconscious of the material situation until the patient recalled her to the human surroundings.

Often in raising the dead, Mrs. Eddy forgot the patient com-

pletely, as a wordless flood of life filled her consciousness. In her deep spiritual realization that “infinite Love was infinite Life, and infinite Life was infinite Love, everywhere present,” the patient was restored.*

Ralph Spencer tells of a reporter for the *Syracuse Post* who after interviewing Mrs. Eddy wrote: “I knew then and I know now that I was in the presence of an extraordinary person. It was as though here was one who had fasted—had been in long periods of prayer and solitary communion with her God and her Christ and that something of the great spiritual life eternal had settled upon her...I have always felt that this was my greatest interview. Her presence has always been with me. Her name is surely enrolled among the greatest religious leaders of all times.”

Many have written that the moment they saw Mrs. Eddy they knew they were in the presence of one inspired by God.

The Rev. S. E. Simonsen wrote: “I can find no words to express fully my gratitude to God for this noble and wonderful woman, who was good enough, pure enough, unselfish enough, and intelligent enough to receive this revelation of divine Science, and to record it in such a language as to make plain to the benighted understanding of mankind the way of God’s full salvation through Christ.”

“The Spirit and the bride say, Come!” (S&H 548:1) Inspired thought relinquishes a sensual and mortal theory of the universe and adopts the spiritual and immortal.

In *Documents*, on page 227, Caroline D. Noyes writes: “One distinguishing feature of Mrs. Eddy’s students and loyal followers and her faithful Normal teachers, they always recognized, and have always done so, the fact that Mrs. Eddy was the woman St. John prophesies of in Revelation xii, and the little book spoken of in a previous chapter is Science and Health....They know that no mortal

*Read the nearly 300 accounts of our beloved Leader’s healing work in the inspiring book, *The Healer: The Healing Work of Mary Baker Eddy* by David L. Keyston, available through Rare Book Company, P.O. Box 6957, Freehold, NJ 07728, (908) 364-8043, and from the Bookmark, P.O. Box 801143, Santa Clarita, CA 91380, (800) 220-7767.

man could have been instrumental in the coming of Christian Science, whereas the *little book* must be in accordance with the scriptural prophecy, the seed of the woman.

“The male and female [in one] of God’s man must appear, to free man, which Christian Science is doing by elevating woman to her rightful place as equal of the male, thus completing or bringing out the whole man. In so believing, they recognize the only true Leader in Mrs. Eddy, the Revelator, the Discoverer and Founder of the Christ, Truth, and Science as containing the whole undivided Truth that is saving the world. They consider it an altogether sacred book as prophesied by St. John, and feel confident by the results of their work in casting out error and healing [every manner of discord], it is the word of God and will save all who trust to it, and see in it a continuation and confirmation of Jesus’ teaching.”

“The undying thirst of the affections demands a being of love, an unfailling good applicable to our daily needs, and to know we have not a need for which there is no supply.”

Dear, beloved Mary Baker Eddy, you, like Jesus and Paul have fought the good fight, you have kept the faith. In meekness and self-abnegation you took the irrevocable step that committed you to the conversion of your pure ideal into life. You were bound to a star and could not turn back. No one will ever again have to drink the cup you drank to make clear to us our God-being. Your divine works will heal all mankind and show them their divinity.

“Divine Science rolls back the clouds of error with the light of truth and lifts the curtain on man [on that which is conceived and born of Truth and Love] as never born and never dying, but as coexistent with his creator” (S&H 557:18).

Our dear Leader has shown us, by her unfailling example, what the chapter marriage in the first edition teaches us: that virtue is the basis of civilization and progress; that the formation and education of even mortal mind must improve before the millennium, that this will lead us to the realization that all is infinite Mind (our real Mind) and its manifestation, and that for this to happen we must start right where we are, practicing the God-qualities in concrete ways as we go out into the world.

ADDENDUM

The Mary Baker Eddy Institute (a part of the H. M. Wright Publishing Co, Inc.) has just jumped into the 21st Century! We're on the information highway, on the Internet, at the tongue-twisting address: "<http://www.mbeinstitute.org/healing/>", or you can reach us by e-mail at: "healing@mbeinstitute.org". Through the work of David Keyston, our Sales Manager, the Mary Baker Eddy Institute became the first Christian Science organization to establish a beachhead on the World Wide Web. We hope you will hop on the Information Superhighway and visit us soon!

There is something big going on today: the birth of a world-wide computer and communications network. We hear it is remaking society in a way that's profound; that we have to reach back 500 years to the birth of the modern age to find such a change, which is on a par with the biggest transitions in the history of the human species: the transition from hunting and gathering to farming and the transition from farm to factory.

Most of us here at the Mary Baker Eddy Institute are still technologically illiterate. When it comes to technology we don't know what we are talking about. What little we do know about it comes from what we have read or what people have told us, and that is often from their own kids, who at times seem to have a direct link to God.

Yet we are very excited about the possibilities. Rare moments of joy come as we reach out in our commitment to use all available technology to reach every heart receptive to spiritual truth. Who do we want to help? Every one, of course. We want to help the spiritually perceptive—especially those going through deeply troubling waters. We want to help the lonely, the depressed, those struggling with addictions to alcohol or drugs; those suffering from loss of a job; people facing emotional pain; parents hurt and angry when a child goes astray; those whose marriages have failed or those devastated by grief at the loss of a deeply loved spouse, child, or friend.

The Internet gives us an unprecedented opportunity to change lives, and to meet people at their point of need. With the Internet allowing a teenager in Seattle to talk at no cost with a physicist in Hungary, ideas are now unbounded by time and space. No wonder everybody's jumping onto the Internet, including the Mary Baker Eddy Institute, and H. M. Wright Publishing, Inc! (address below)

The Mary Baker Eddy Institute is a tax-exempt, non-profit organization which subsists on donations and receipts from the sale of books. Our purpose is to acquaint humanity with Christian Science and its ability to heal sin, sickness and every discord known to man. We hope to reach out to all who need spiritual support in finding the kingdom of God within their consciousness.

We again thank you for ordering this book and hope you will order other books by Helen Wright. Each of her books returns Mary Baker Eddy to the spiritual pinnacle where she so rightfully belongs. Please order any of these books from the following sources:

Rare Book Company, P.O. Box 6957, Freehold, NJ 07728

The Bookmark, P.O. Box 801143, Santa Clarita, CA 91380

H.W. Pub. Co., 2100 3rd Ave., #2601, Seattle, WA 98121



Pleasant View

The peaceful home Mrs. Eddy loved, where she lived for sixteen eventful years as her love flowed out to all the world.

Index

Symbols

"20th Century Biographers Series" 303
91st Psalm 70

A

A.D. 325 page 232
abstinence 108, 124, 125, 133, 156,
203, 211, 232
Adam Dream 67, 194
Adams, Abigail 198
Aequus Institute 230, 321
Ageless Body, Timeless Mind, 205
Alexandria 231
ANECDOTES
4 year-old Billy 59
balloons 168
Bill 28, 61, 109, 110, 290, 291,
292, 293
Centralia, Illinois 134
Charley 28, 29, 61
feathers 70
Fido 60
grandmother 85, 86
Gregory 62
Jesus and fallen mule 60
Mamma & Pappa 70, 269
mamma murrelet & eagle 71
Obedience School 28
old complaint 53
pigeon 62
Spot 109, 110
Sol Duc Hot Springs 269
Tiny Tim 110
train rides 38, 291, 269
antimatter 92

Apocryphal writings 125
Aramaic 290
Arbiter of his fate 186
Archives 38, 227, 228, 246, 303, 304
Aristotle 59, 69
Art of Loving 85, 238
astronauts 26, 175

B

baby 64, 127, 128, 134
Bancroft, Mr. S. P. 211
Bartlett, Julia 239
Beams, Lynda 83
beauty 65, 77, 78, 101, 107, 213,
216, 227, 269, 320
Benson, Dr. Herbert 267
Bethesda 33, 34, 128, 214, 262
Bethlehem 174, 246, 250, 251, 253,
270, 292, 293
Bill of Rights 313
Billings, Josh xiii
birth 203 (NOTE: see almost all pages)
Bochmer, Julius 60
Bogue, Martha 281
Bookmark 38, 321
Boston 38, 39, 64, 211, 230, 233,
234, 242, 246, 251, 254, 267, 293,
302, 304, 305
Boston Journal vi

C

Caesar 133
Cain 120
Canaan 73, 302
cardinal point 73, 159, 199

- Carpenter, Gilbert C., Sr. 27, 46, 127
 Carpenter, G.C., Jr. & Sr. 228, 292, 304
 Carpenter Item x, 10, 15, 17, 52, 53, 95, 96, 99, 121, 129, 178, 225, 295, 320,
 Carpenter, Mrs. Gilbert 107
 Catholic(ism) *see Roman Catholicism*
 celibacy 108, 129, 138
 character, Christ 44, 145, 166, 176, 294, 298
 Charley 28, 29, 61
 chastity 125, 126
 China conference 175
 Choate, Clara 211, 216, 240, 272, 273
 Chopra, Deepak 205, 206, 265
Christ and Christmas 12, 201, 244, 249, 250, 254, 264, 278, 279, 280
 C. S. Association 39, 211
 C. S. Board of Directors 146, 200, 246, 267, 303, 304
C. S. Journal 5, 21, 39, 130, 146, 196, 247, 264, 289, 293, 293
C. S. Monitor 230, 264, 265
 C. S. Publishing Society 129, 230, 231, 264, 270, 275, 305, 308
C. S. Sentinel 54, 79, 247, 264, 289
 Christianity and a human person 185
 Civil War 313
 Coleman, Janet 254
 Columbus xi, 172, 307
 Committee on Publication 269
 Communist 310
 Concord 163
 Concordance 51, 146
 Confucius 82
 Congressional Library 99
 Constantine, Emperor 40, 232
 Cooper, William 40
 Coptic 60, 123
 copyright 283, 286, 300
 Council of Nicaea 232
 Cousins, Norman 205, 265, 266
 Crafts, Hiram 7
 crime 309
 Crucifixion, Why? 133, 218
- ## D
- Daniel 251
 Darwin 34
 de Chardin 205, 206, 265
 Deed of Trust 305
 Demosthenes 32
Denver News 234
 diamond 22
 Dickey, Adam 78, 102, 105, 151, 236, 303
 Disraeli 53
 doctor 48, 62, 63, 64, 115, 266, 306
Miscellaneous Documents 211, 215, 237, 254, 272, 273, 281, 319, 321
 Doorly, John 62, 286, 289, 290, 293
 Dorsey, Dr. John M. 266
 Dossey, Dr. Larry 62
 Dunn, Emma 291
- ## E
- eddy 106
 Eddy, Dr. Asa G. 211, 212, 240, 241
 Edison, Thomas 87
 Einstein, Albert 13, 82
 Elders, Joycelyn 310
 Emmaus 257, 258
 England 293, 304
 Enoch 35, 48
Epistle of Titus 125, 126
 estoppels 242, 260, 301, 304, 308
 Ethiopia 231
 Europe 61
 Eustace, Herbert 90, 269, 270, 292
 Extension, M. C. 283, 284, 285
- ## F
- Fate of Disciples 231

Farlow, Alfred 78
 feminine 61, 124, 141, 166, 184, 189,
 197, 202, 244, 280
 Fitzpatrick, Lida xiv
 Footsteps of the Pioneer 5
 Fluno, Francis x
Fragments of a Lost Gospel 196
 Frye, Calvin xiii, 9, 12, 46, 47, 240
 diary 9
 fundamental platform 127

G

Gaus, Magdalene 292
 gender 61, 128, 149, 155, 166, 174,
 generic man 121, 155, 248, 255
 Geradi, Ralph 304
 Gerson Therapy 268
 ghastly farce 135
 Gilman, James 274
 God-character 17
 God's Messenger 229
 Greek legend 25
 Gump, Forrest 28

H

H. M. Wright Publishing Co, Inc. 324
 Hall, Lydia 127
 Hanna, Judge 112, 216, 225, 226, 244,
 257, 288
 Harris, Mrs. Virginia 267
*Healer, The: The Healing Work of Mary
 Baker Eddy* 321
 healing@mbeinstitute.org 323, 324
 Hogue, Blanche Hersey 127
 Holy Grail 4, 51, 69, 86, 293, 296
 home 40, 58, 59, 70, 79, 94, 109,
 110, 126, 127, 128, 134, 139,
 172, 192, 199, 201, 211, 242, 253,
 254, 271, 290, 292, 314
 hotels and motels 283
<http://www.mbeinstitute.org/healing/>

323, 324
 Hugo, Victor 48
 human birth 34, 37, 42, 49, 108, 116,
 120, 123, 127, 128, 130, 134, 135,
 161, 166, 169, 173, 194, 198, 271
 human procreation 119, 134
 Humor 61, 86, 87
HUMOROUS ANECDOTES & JOKES
 Abe Lincoln & General Hooker 313
 bank robber 50
 basement 75
 bat infestation 47
 bored scholar 22
 cash and credit card 123
 diplomacy 87
 doctor & cleaning woman 306
 doctor's orders 115
 fresh start 157
 Gorbachev & the kittens 310
 Hell & the choir 48
 hunter & fisherman 51
 Irishman 40
 impatient patient 52
 Limburger cheese 81
 lion 115, 281
 McCloskey, Mary & Lydia Pinkham 236
 mother at bank 86
 mother-in-law 88
 preacher 134, 135, 142, 265
 preacher's horse 20
 restaurant, Last Supper 296
 scale reading 46
 seasick passenger 173
 sheik & stockbroker 240
 shoe repair 108
 skeptic at the circus 281
 sleep-walking husband 142
 stabbing pain in right eye 48
 teller & bank robber 50
 tongue-tied usher 313
 Huss, John 231
 Hyde, Amaryllis 84

Hyde Park 61

I

I am worthy 82, 88
 Infallible Now 211-216, 221
 Information Age 21
 Internet 324, 325

J

Jacob at Peniel 95
 Jerusalem 231
 Jews of Salonica 231
 Johnson, Lyman 38, 39
 Johnson, William B. 38, 39
 Jones, Elizabeth Earl 93, 163

K

Kappeler, Max 290, 293
 Keyston, David L. 321, 325
 King, Julia Field, 202, 227
 Knapp, Bliss 236, 303, 305
 Knapp, Ira 226

L

Lamsa, Dr. 290
 Larry, Dr. Dossey 62, 266
Latin Vulgate 231
 Launfal, Vision of Sir 20
 light years ahead of us 6
 litigation, the great 305
Logia of Jesus 196
 London 61, 289, 293
 Longyear, Mary Beecher 38
 Love Made Manifest 93
 Lowell, James Russell 20
 Luther 231
 Lytton, Baron Buliver 21

M

Mansfield, Loren 229

Manual 8, 131, 146, 230, 231, 242,
 260, 264, 270, 300, 301, 302,
 303, 304, 306, 308
 Markham, Edwin 40, 213
 marriage and progeny 129, 132, 164,
 165, 218
 Mary Baker Eddy Institute 283, 321,
 323, 324
 masculine 61, 124, 141, 166, 174,
 184, 189, 197, 202, 280
 material birth 108, 127, 189, 196, 218
 Mayo, Dr. Charles Horace 266
 Mayo, Dr. William James 266
 McClellan 313
 McKenzie, Daisette 93
 medical help 62
 Melchisedec 34
Miscellany 5, 160, 234, 248
 Moody, Dr. D. L. 74
 More, Hannah 2
 Morgan, John 62
 Mother Teresa 83
 Mount of Transfiguration 13, 35, 98,
 200
 Moyers, Bill 265
Mrs. Eddy's Place 247, 289
 Mrs. Eddy's students 134, 135, 214,
 235, 258, 261, 264, 316
 Mt. Moriah 110
 murder 128, 218, 277, 278

N

National Women's Hall of Fame x
 Nero, Emperor 232
 New Hampshire 39
New Testament Apocrypha 125
 New York 61, 284, 293, 314
 Newton, Isaac 32
 Next Friends 95, 241, 242, 284, 285
 Nicaea Council 232
 Nixon, William G. 199, 204
 Noyes, Carolyn D. 237, 321

O

Oakes, Richard xv, 38, 304
 Old Theology 116, 130, 135, 136, 220,
 245, 262, 265, 276
 Operation Blessing 84
 Orgain, Alice 249

P

Pandora box 142
 Paradise 162
 Paterson, Dr. 94
 Patmos 232
 Peale, Norman Vincent 206
 Philadelphia 38, 315
 pioneer 1, 5, 44, 163, 230, 282, 317
 Pleasant View 39, 242
 Pope 226
 Power of Love 81, 295
Practice Talks 293
 Protestantism xii
 Pythagoras 108

R

Rare Book Company 38, 304, 321
Recollections of Mary Baker Eddy, 275
 Repaid Pages 64
 Research Center 324
 Rev. S. E. Simonsen 321
 reward of holiness 125
 Robertson, Nemi 93, 207, 319
 Robison, James 206
 Rogers, Will 309
 Roman Catholicism xii, 131
 Roman Forum 125
 Romans 133
 Rome 231, 232
 Roxbury 211

S

Salem 211

Sargent, Laura xiv, 121, 165, 198,
 203, 264
 Schumacher 231
 Seattle 201, 266, 324
 Sets the Seal 92
 Sex and Progeny 119, 202
 shadow 3, 11, 12, 13, 30, 68, 70, 73,
 77, 138, 143, 147, 149, 153, 155,
 156, 157, 158, 171, 173, 175, 187,
 190, 191, 193, 229, 297, 315
 Shakespeare 13, 289
 Shaw, Bernard 40
 Shipman, Emma C., 54
Six Days of Revelation 120, 261
 Socialism 310
 Solomon 218
 South Africa 304
 Spencer, Ralph 321
 Spofford, Mr. 241
 Stetson, Augusta 229, 251, 285
 Strong's Bible Concordance 318
 Switzerland 293
 system 17, 19, 20, 22, 23, 73,
 111, 112, 140, 141, 233, 283, 286,
 287, 288, 289, 290, 293, 294, 299,
 306, 308, 310, 315

T

telemedicine 268
 Templeton, Sir John 267
 temporary help 62
 Testing Time, The 94
 Thecla 163
Thomas, The Gospel of 123, 124
 Thompson, Abigail Dwyer 93, 320
 Titus 125, 126
 Tomlinson 80, 236, 303
 Totten, C. A. L. 175
 true sense of being 103, 106, 200
 Twain, Mark 90, 156
 two meanings for man 29
 Tyndal 231

V

veil 23, 37, 49, 76, 79, 113, 116, 127,
135, 152, 194, 198, 213, 218,
220, 246, 271, 275, 288
Veira, Stanford 119
virginity 126, 159, 199

W

Wall St. Journal 60, 92
Wallup, Malcolm 308
We Knew Mary Baker Eddy 235, 257
Webster 94, 106
Wiggin, Mr. 280

Wilberforce, William 83
Wilbur, Sybil 93
Wilcox, Martha 15
World's Parliament of Religions 226
worth, greatest 84
Wright brothers 92
Wyclif 231

Y

Yakima, Washington 109
Young, Alan 87
Young, Bicknell 74
young people 55, 56, 308



Chestnut Hill



